

# Marriage in the Kingdom.





Nihil Obstat: Rev. Jacques Gervais, O.M.I., D. Th.  
January 27, 1997.

Imprimatur: Msgr. Roger Morin, P.A.  
Vicar General  
Archdiocese of Ottawa.  
1247 Kilborn Place  
Ottawa, Ontario Canada. K1H 6K9

(Seal) January 29, 1997.

“The Nihil Obstat and Imprimatur are declarations that a book is considered to be free from doctrinal or moral error. The declaration does not imply that contents of the book could not be expressed otherwise.”

~ ~ ~

© Raymond G. Poulin, 1997.

No part of this book may be reproduced in any way without permission, asked for and received in writing, from the publisher.

Publisher: Rev. Mr. Raymond G. Poulin,  
1859 Axminster Court,  
Ottawa, Ontario  
Canada. K1C 1Z5.

email: [rpoulin@magma.ca](mailto:rpoulin@magma.ca).

“Marriage in the Kingdom” is also on the internet at:

**MARRIAGE  
IN  
THE  
KINGDOM**

---

---

by

Rev. Mr. Raymond G. Poulin,  
permanent deacon.

## **Permissions.**

Excerpts From "THE JERUSALEM BIBLE," by Alexander Jones, ed. Copyright (c) 1966 by Darton, Longman & Todd Ltd. and Doubleday, a division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc. Used by permission of Doubleday, a division of Bantam Doubleday Dell Publishing Group, Inc.

~

Excerpts from "The Mystical City of God." by Venerable Mary of Agreda (A Popular Abridgement) reprinted with specific permission; copyrighted 1971 by AMI Press, Washington, N.J. 07882

The Mystical City of God, A Popular Abridgement, Chapter V, Reprinted with specific permission; copyrighted 1971 by AMI Press, Washington, N.J. 07882. Address, The World Apostolate of Fatima, Mountain View Road P.O. Box 976 Washington New Jersey. 07882 Tel. 908-689-1700 Fax 908-690-6279.

~

Excerpts from the "City of God." by St. Augustine, Penguin Books. 27 Wrights Lane, London, U. K. W8 5TZ 1320 words (pages 903-906) Translation copyright Henry Bettenson 1972, reproduced by permission of Penguin Books Limited. Publication in 1984 by Richard Clay Limited, Bungay, Suffolk. U.K..

~

Excerpts from "The Conspiracy of God, the Holy Spirit in Us." by Father John C. Haughey, s.j., Loyola University, 6525 North Sheridan Road Chicago Ill 60626. Used with specific permission of Father John C. Haughey, s.j. Reprinted in 1996 by Claretian Press, Fax 011 63 2921 7429.

“... when the Spirit of Truth comes  
he will lead you to the complete truth,  
since he will not be speaking as from himself  
but will say only what he has learnt;  
and he will tell you of the things to come.  
He will glorify me,  
since all he tells you  
will be taken from what is mine.”

Jesus of Nazareth.  
(John 16:13-15)



**“The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ  
and the love of God  
and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit  
be with you all.”**





With eternal gratitude  
to each and every Person along the way,  
who shared with me the joy and happiness  
of living in the Kingdom of God,

and to  
Father Lucien Nourry, s.m.m.  
who guided me with the finger of God,

and to  
Father Jean-Guy LeMarier, o.m.i.  
and the staff at Saint Paul's University  
who fed me the word of God,

and to  
Father Germain Gendron, s.m.m.  
who watched over me in the name of God,

and to  
Archbishop Joseph-Aurele Plourde  
who welcomed me into the service of God,

and to  
Monsignor Wilfrid Bray,  
who in his simplicity and transparency  
showed me the holiness of God,

and to  
Dearest Florence,  
vessel of Love and window to the Kingdom of God,

and to  
Mother Mary,  
for showing me the Light of God,



## Introduction.

The journey you are about to begin, was assembled from a number of parish retreats titled "Marriage in the Kingdom." These retreats took place in Ontario Canada, during the years 1980-1991. To every person who attended and helped me (through their participation) in developing the series, in God's name, I thank you.

The chapters in this book are in order of priority, where your spiritual growth and development are concerned. Before making any major decisions, read "Marriage in the Kingdom." from cover to cover, to see and understand how everything fits together. It is crucial that you read a little at a time, reflect, meditate, self-examination, practice, then taste the next "plate from this spiritual buffet." I am also sharing with you, how our King woke me from my sleep, and my extraordinary journey with Him, ever since.

If (for all kinds of reasons) you will be making the "Marriage in the Kingdom." journey alone, remember, God is with you, dearest Mother Mary is with you, your guardian angel is with you, and through these words, I am with you.

Some couples will read "Marriage in the Kingdom." before retiring. The opening prayer is said together. One or more numbered sections are read, each spouse taking their turn to read. Once a section is read, they talk about it, agree, disagree, or improve on what they read and consider how their growth as God's children can blossom from the exchange. When they have read and talked enough for that session, the closing prayer is said. Then, a blessing on each other before a sweet good night kiss.

Other couples will meet as a group, either at home or at church, nominate a presider, greet each other with a sign of Peace, pray an opening prayer, take turns to read and discuss each section, have a *little party* and close with a prayer, hymn and a blessing.

If the gospel message in "Marriage in the Kingdom." helps you find new life and happiness in the Lord, please tell me about it. It is important that we share with each other and help one another. Confidentiality will be respected.

May our Lord bless † you, dear Child of God, as you begin this



## **Index 1.**

Opening Prayer..... 1 - Closing Prayer..... 283

Analytical index 286

### **Chapter 1. Heartbreaks! Heartbreaks! Heartbreaks! 5**

1.1 A field strewn with broken hearts. 1.2 What to do?  
1.3 The miracle. Part one, roll up you sleeves. 1.4 The miracle. Part two, with Jesus, do it. 1.5 Making things happen. 1.6 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 2. Living With Persons or Dying With Things? 14**

2.1 Why are there so many heartbreaks? 2.2 Group one, the ideal reply. 2.3 Group two, persons not present to self. 2.4 Group three, persons who did not acknowledge my presence. 2.5 Group four, persons who saw neither self nor me. 2.6 Group five, persons who saw only a thing. 2.7 Persons who live with things. 2.8 Only persons can love. 2.9 Seeing the visible as a sign of the invisible. 2.10 Flesh and blood, window to the invisible Other. 2.11 The visible, sign of the invisible. 2.12 After 35 years, they finally meet. 2.13 Speed is an obstacle to meeting the Other. 2.14 Communication is through our senses. 2.15 Meeting the Other means taking risks. 2.16 Jealous of the tomatoes. 2.17 Visible signs, life line for survival. 2.18 The bottom line, what you see is what you get.

### **Chapter 3. Dialogue is to Love, what Blood is to Life. 25**

3.1 You, Others and God. 3.2 Dialogue between sweet-hearts. 3.3 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 4. Creation, Visible Sign of Our Invisible God. 30**

4.1 A universe just for you. 4.2 Jesus, you and creation. 4.3 How much closer to you can God get? 4.4 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 5. Our First Parents and What They Did. 34**

First sign of the Tempter's presence. 6.6 Importance of not responding to the Tempter. 6.7 You are not God. 6.8 Our Mother's first move. 6.9 The Tempter's response. 6.10 Head (logic) in battle with the heart (Love). 6.11 Why sin is compared to a fruit. 6.12 The sin. 6.13 Sin enslaves. 6.14 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 7. Visible Signs of Sin's Poison. 44**

7.1 Nineteen visible signs of sin and its poison. 7.2 The first visible sign of sin, nakedness. 7.3 My first sin. 7.4 The second visible sign of sin, fear of God. 7.5 The third visible sign of sin, hiding from God. 7.6 How do we hide from God? 7.7 The fourth visible sign of sin, blame. 7.8 The fifth visible sign of sin, facing time and eternity alone. 7.9 The sixth visible sign of sin, false notion of self-sufficiency. 7.10 The seventh visible sign of sin, jealousy. 7.11 The eighth visible sign of sin, rage. 7.12 The ninth visible sign of sin, vision is clouded, mind is confused. 7.13 The tenth visible sign of sin, deviousness. 7.14 The eleventh visible sign of sin, speed. 7.15 The twelfth visible sign of sin, avarice. 7.16 The thirteenth visible sign of sin, heart hardens. 7.17 The fourteenth visible sign of sin, new gods are needed. 7.18 The fifteenth visible sign of sin, spirit now condemns. 7.19 The sixteenth visible sign of sin, despair. 7.20 The seventeenth visible sign of sin, soul is terrified. 7.21 The eighteenth visible sign of sin, walking dead. 7.22 The nineteenth visible sign of sin, cries of damnation. 7.23 The doctor is healed. 7.24 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 8. The World You Were Born Into. 57**

8.1 Satan's Garden of Eden. 8.2 Man's creation. 8.3 This is also the world where Jesus of Nazareth, God's Son—was born into. 8.4 Your spouse's plea. 8.5 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 9. A Light Comes into Our Darkness. 59**

9.1 Jesus' divinity. 9.2 Jesus' teachings. 9.3 Jesus' mira-

tion. 10.8 You are a new creation. 10.9 Your new title and your crown. 10.10 God looks at you in wonder and in awe. 10.11 Made in God's image, but Whom do you look like? 10.12 Jesus is a natural Presence in our lives. 10.13 Jesus, our Light to see God by. 10.14 Your will. 10.15 Your heart. 10.16 Your mind. 10.17 Your body. 10.18 The bottom line.

**Chapter 11. Jesus, Your King, Your Royal Confidante. 77**

11.1 In charge of God's creation. 11.2 Your name says it all. 11.3 Jesus is within you. 11.4 What has Jesus done for you? 11.5 The bottom line.

**Chapter 12. Your Heavenly Father. 81**

12.1 Abba! 12.2 Loving money more than loving our heavenly Father. 12.3 Our Father's countless gifts. 12.4 We must be as generous as He is. 12.5 Being proud of your heavenly Father. 12.6 Your royal responsibilities. 12.7 The bottom line.

**Chapter 13. Holy Spirit, Faithful Friend & Companion. 86**

13.1 Our Teacher. 13.2 Voice of the Holy Spirit. 13.3 Voice of false pride. 13.4 Prompts from the Holy Spirit. 13.5 Holy Spirit's presence in teaching. 13.6 Holy Spirit's presence in ministry. 13.7 Holy Spirit helping at work. 13.8 Holy Spirit needing our help. 13.9 Holy Spirit taking over. 13.10 Holy Spirit bringing sheep back to the flock. 13.11 Holy Spirit melting a heart. 13.12 A healing in the kitchen. 13.13 Holy Spirit ministering on the road. 13.14 Life in the Kingdom of God, anything but dull. 13.15 The bottom line.

**Chapter 14. Mother Mary, Queen of Heaven and Earth. 97**

14.1 Jesus' Mother, our Mother. 14.2 Our Mother's heartbreaks. 14.3 Reaching your Mother Mary. 14.4 Mother Mary's counsel received in prayer. 14.5 Examples of Mother Mary's assistance. 14.6 Mother Mary's nower. 14.7 Mother Mary's anniversary gift. 14.8 Prayer



capade. 16.5 The bottom line.

**Chapter 17. The Crown Jewels. 113**

17.1 Seven precious "Stones." 17.2 The jewel of Wisdom. 17.3 The jewel of Understanding. 17.4 The jewel of Counsel. 17.5 The jewel of Fortitude. 17.6 Example of the gift of fortitude. 17.7 The jewel of Knowledge. 17.8 The jewel of Piety. 17.9 The jewel of Fear of the Lord. 17.10 The bottom line.

**Chapter 18. Your Royal Physician. 120**

18.1 Repent and live. 18.2 The bottom line.

**Chapter 19. Your Royal Heritage. 124**

19.1 Your royal status. 19.2 Who are you and where are you? 19.3 Comportment. 19.4 Prayer. 19.5 Where do we pray? 19.6 Where is your Father? 19.7 Make yourself comfortable. 19.8 A time to ask questions. 19.9 How your questions are answered. 19.10 Ask your Mother Mary. 19.11 Time for your Father to love you. 19.12 Spirit's call to prayer is a love call. 19.13 Prayer time is learning time. 19.14 Prayer, our King's gift giving time. 19.15 How long will it take before I can pray? 19.16 How often should we pray? 19.17 Mother Mary. 19.18 The Rosary. 19.19 The Psalms. 19.20 The Liturgy of the Hours. 19.21 Community prayer. 19.22 Spontaneous prayer. 19.23 The bottom line.

**Chapter 20. Heartbreaks in the Family. 139**

20.1 Confusion over priorities. 20.2 Right and Wrong. 20.3 The perfectionist. 20.4 The good person. 20.5 An example of God's goodness in creative action. 20.6 Right and wrong, the enemy of Goodness. 20.7 Personality and character influence. 20.8 The bottom line.

**Chapter 21. Power to Forgive Treasure of the Kingdom. 147**

21.1 Reconciliation. 21.2 Forgiving is everything. 21.3

**Chapter 22. Heartbroken Lambs. 163**

22.1 The experiment. 22.2 The bottom line.

**Chapter 23. Seeing the Presence of Jesus in Others. 166**

23.1 Where Love is, God is. 23.2 Presence of Jesus (Love) in the Other. 23.3 Presence of Jesus (Love) in the Other. 23.4 Love, must Love. 23.5 Love is more important than health. 23.6 The bottom line.

**Chapter 24. Grace as a Condition for Discernment. 172**

24.1 We must be part of the Vine. 24.2 A branch on the Vine again. 24.3 How I was nursed back onto the Vine. 24.4 The bottom line.

**Chapter 25. Discernment. 180**

25.1 When to say, "Yes!" and when to say, "No!" 25.2 Loss of freedom. 25.3 Voice of Holy Spirit is gentle. 25.4 An experience with a Breeze. 25.5 Priorities and responsibilities in the Castle. 25.6 Priority number one, the Lord. 25.7 Priority number two, your health. 25.8 Priority number three, your spouse. 25.9 Priority number four, your children. 25.10 Priority number five, your work. 25.11 Priority number six, your extended family, the community. 25.12 Work in conflict with priorities. 25.13 Example of ministry or community service in conflict with priorities. 25.14 Discernment when family service in conflict. 25.15 Example of conflict between children and spouse. 25.16 When priorities seem to collide. 25.17 Why there must be priorities. 25.18 Doubt. 25.19 Anxiety. 25.20 Without Peace we have nothing. 25.21 The bottom line.

**Chapter 26. Spirit or Serpent? 201**

26.1 When are prompts from the Holy Spirit or from selfishness? 26.2 Discerning at 110 kilometers an hour. 26.3 The bottom line.

**Chapter 27. Community Approval. 206**

29.1 How to Identify It. 29.2 Focus of concern is for the Other. 29.3 Sounds are sounds of Life. 29.4 Your name. 29.5 Happy faces. 29.6 Wounds and bruises. 29.7 Full potential. 29.8 Freedom. 29.9 Being Oneself. 29.10 Experiences are learning opportunities. 29.11 Creativity is the Word. 29.12 Order in the Kingdom. 29.13 No waste. 29.14 Accentuating the Positive. 29.15 Fragility of the Other. 29.16 Peace. 29.17 Lies. 29.18 Speed. 29.19 Blame. 29.20 Condemnations and put downs. 29.21 Force is God's option, not ours. 29.22 Love is stronger than force. 29.23 Quiet more powerful than noise. 29.24 A father's wish, resolved by peace and not by force. 29.25 The most powerful force on earth. **Kingdom of God Summary.** 29.26 The Monarch. 29.27 The Mind. 29.28 The body. 29.29 The Royal flag. 29.30 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 30. The Kingdom of Man. 229**

30.1 How to Identify It. 30.2 The project is all that matters. 30.3 The project defined. 30.4 The conspiracy. 30.5 Laws, laws and more laws. 30.6 An example of laws, rules, restrictions. 30.7 Ruler is judge and jury. 30.8 Use of force. 30.9 Life in the kingdom of man. 30.10 The weak, the fragile. 30.11 Sounds in the kingdom of man. 30.12 Numbers in the kingdom of man. 30.13 Creativity in the Kingdom of Man. 30.14 Blame in the Kingdom of Man. 30.15 Storms in the Kingdom of Man. 30.16 Forgiving in the Kingdom of Man. **Kingdom of Man, Summary.** 30.17 The Monarch. 30.18 False pride, blindness. 30.19 The Royal Confidante. 30.20 Logic. 30.21 The Enforcer. 30.22 The Royal Flag. 30.23 The bottom line.

### **Chapter 31. The Kingdom of Satan. 241**

31.1 How it can be identified. 31.2 Sounds of the suffering. 31.3 Faces of the dying. 31.4 No escape. 31.5 Freedom. 31.6 The ill, the disabled, the aged. 31.7 Submission. 31.8 Learning experiences. 31.9 Condemna-

32.1 An Overview. 32.2 Similarities: Kingdom of Man and Kingdom of Satan. 32.3 Choices. 32.4 Choice, Kingdom of God. 32.5 Choice, Kingdom of Man. 32.6 Choice, Kingdom of Satan. 32.7 The bottom line.

**Chapter 33. Jesus, the Lady, and the Pharisees. 251**

33.1 The way of the Lord. 33.2 The bottom line.

**Chapter 34. The Ministry of Marriage. 7 Models. 257**

34.1 Marriage, first ministry. 34.2 Qualifications of spouses in ministry of marriage. 34.3 When lacking in qualifications. 34.4 Marriage models. 34.5 Marriage model 1, Mr. and Mrs. Wine. 34.6 Blessing each other. 34.7 In death. 34.8 Children. 34.9 The bottom line. 34.10 Marriage model 2, Mr. Me and Miss Me. 34.11 The bottom line. 34.12 Marriage model 3, Mr. and Mrs. Grapejuice. 34.13 The bottom line. 34.14 Marriage model 4, Mr. Water and Mrs. Wine. 34.15 The bottom line. 34.16 Marriage model 5, Mr. and Mrs. Water. 34.17 The bottom line. 34.18 Marriage model 6, Mr. Tar and Mrs. Wine. 34.19 The bottom line. 34.20 Marriage model 7, Mr. Mrs. Icecube. 34.21 The children. 34.22 Which marriage is yours? 34.23 Marriage model 1, summary. 34.24 Marriage models 2 to 7, summary. 34.25 Separation. 34.26 Persons living together but married to an Other. 34.27 The bottom line.

**Chapter 35. A Loving Supplication. 276**

35.1 The appeal.

**Chapter 36. Your Highness, Your Throne Awaits You. 279**

36.1 My dearest Friend.

~ ~ ~

### **Opening Prayer.**

[The opening prayer is said before you begin each reading. Instead of this prayer you may choose another prayer you feel inspired to pray. The closing prayer is at the end of this book and is said after each reading. You may choose another form of prayer.]

† In the name of the Father, and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit. Amen.

Heavenly Father, blessed is Thy Holy Name for this time we have Together. Blessed is Thy Holy Name Father, for reaching out to me personally this day, for confirming your Love for me. Blessed is Thy Holy Name Father, for the joy of being your Child in Christ Jesus, for the grace and happiness of loving you with my King, my brothers and sisters. In blissful freedom, with my heart and lips I lovingly pray:

Our Father, who art in Heaven,  
hallowed be thy name;  
thy kingdom come;  
thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.  
Give us this day our daily bread;  
forgive us our trespasses  
as we forgive those who trespass against us;  
and lead us not into temptation,  
but deliver us from evil,  
for the Kingdom,  
the power and the glory are yours  
now and forever.  
Amen.

[You are invited dearest brother and sister in the Lord, to place this learning experience you are about to receive in the hands of our Mother Mary. Let Her weed out all those things that are not from Her Son. that you have only the purest. tastiest spirit-

Hail Mary full of grace the Lord is with Thee,  
 blessed art Thou amongst women  
 and blessed is the Fruit of Thy womb Jesus.

Holy Mary, Mother of God  
 pray for us sinners  
 now, and at the hour of our death.  
 Amen.

**Hymn, Immaculate Mary.**

Immaculate Mary, your praises we sing,  
 You reign now in heaven with Jesus our King.

Refrain.  
 Ave, ave, ave Maria.  
 Ave, ave, ave Maria.

In heaven, the blessed your glory proclaim:  
 On earth, we your children invoke your fair name.

Your name is our power, your virtues our light,  
 Your love is our comfort, your pleading our might.

We pray for our mother, the Church upon earth,  
 And bless, dearest Lady, the land of our birth.

† In the name of the Father, and of the Son and of the Holy  
 Spirit.

Amen.

*Marriage in the Kingdom.*

*Part One.*

*Meet the Real You.*





This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 1.**

### **Heartbreaks! Heartbreaks! Heartbreaks!**

#### **1.1 A field strewn with broken hearts.**

Once I was invited to minister to the sick as a volunteer at our general hospital.<sup>2</sup> Working with the pastoral care team, our concerns were focused on helping patients and family members deal with sickness and death.

As I went from floor to floor, unit to unit and room to room, I had the sensation I was being escorted across a bleak, barren battlefield... I saw "bodies" lying all over the place.

[I felt the presence of an angel at my side, pointing out each casualty to me, showing me their broken hearts, their sufferings, all caused by heartbreaks. I felt my guide wanted me to see what was happening in this other world, a world I had not known before. I will share many other heavenly experiences with you, as I give witness and testify that the Holy Spirit is as active as He ever was. I hope these events will console and reassure you. You are not alone, God is still with you. You have as much a biblical role to play in this age as did your spiritual forefathers in theirs, perhaps even more so.]

Whenever your heart sees a person treated unjustly, deprived, or abused, and you know that this need not be- that this should not be, that this must not be... that will be your cue to "be about your Father's business."<sup>3</sup> All heaven is at your disposal. You are Christ's minister, made in His image. You will be overwhelmed as you realize who you are as God's child and what you can do. Once you have taken root in this knowledge, in Spirit and in Truth begin your ministry in the glorification process.<sup>4</sup> With Christ your King, bring life with all of its abundance<sup>5</sup> and joy<sup>6</sup> to your spouse and children to brothers and

God has placed in your pastoral care.]

My eyes saw persons of all shapes and sizes with nearly every illness imaginable. My heart, however, saw many who were suffering or dying because of repeated, severe, acute heartbreaks. I would go so far as to say 90% of those hospitalized were there because of an illness or a condition that began directly or indirectly with a broken heart.

Many were repeatedly wounded for want of being loved or for being abused in the name of love. They simply could not take it anymore. Looking at their faces I saw despair, helplessness, loneliness and a deep, deep sadness. Their large open eyes revealed their confusion, they were disoriented, tired . . . no signs of life. Their stares penetrated through me . . . into space. "Why?" their eyes asked

Many were hurt and confused, their poor bodies responding to their heart's pain and bewilderment with biological dysfunction. Normal healthy tensions between body and soul were no longer a reality.

Many had naively walked into traps, into veritable snake pits. Once snared, there was no way out except through the pains of heartbreak and illness. These poor souls were only those who required hospitalization.

What about others who were not hospitalized?

What about those persons who resigned themselves to their lot in life, living as prisoners in a one-way relationship?

How many broken hearts have simply accepted their fate and move around day after day like zombies?

How many broken hearts have in anger resorted to crime?

How many broken hearts have been placed in mental institutions because they could not cope with the pains of heartbreak?

What about those hearts, who have simply run away? What about hearts who could no longer face the same hell day after day after day?

What about those hearts who took pills, alcohol and drugs to numb the pains caused by a love gone sour?

And what about those persons who saw their only escape was to take their own life— who saw suicide and death as a better option than living each day with the gnawing pains of a broken heart?

“... My most bitter heartbreak is my loved one doubting my love for her.”

~

“... Growing up and not knowing if I was loved by my mother. Never being told (by her) 'I love you.' It really hurts.”

~

“... Being alone all the time.”

~

“My biggest heartbreak is never being loved as a child and later on all the many disappointments in my 19 years of marriage.”

~

“... My father's alcoholism. I have not yet been able to totally forgive my father for all the pain and suffering that he has brought to my mother and brothers and sisters. There is a part of me who loves my Father yet there is a bitter side that hates the alcoholic. I hope to someday separate the alcohol from my father and come to an understanding of why and how his alcoholism has affected my life today.”

~

“... The change in me as a wife and mother. I am not happy and loving with myself or my family. I do not know where or how I changed. Was it my husband's illness or the pressures of raising children today or am I just blaming everyone else but myself?”

~

“... When I saw my daughter place a gift for my husband under the Christmas tree addressed: 'For him.'”

~

“... I was dating a girl for two years and asked her to be my wife. Three months before the wedding she called it off, telling me I loved my family more than I loved her.”

~

“... Last summer when my husband admitted being involved with another woman, and when I found out to what extent, I was totally devastated.”

~

“... After my husband died I married again. Then I found out I was not in love with my second husband. He was and still is very criti-

was missing in action and presumed dead. I wandered all over town, finally sitting on the sidewalk, crying my heart out as I felt so alone and abandoned.”

~

“... When my husband told me that he would claim custody of my children, I felt as if something in me had died, and I knew without them I would commit suicide. Since then we have reconciled and God made this possible. A lot of people have prayed for us and still do. I am thankful to the Lord.”

~

“... I am not really happy with who I am.”

~

“... My wife leaves me to sleep with another because she says I am unable to satisfy her and that I should do the same.”

~

“... I would like to be reconciled with my older brother. I have no way to communicate with him and I do not remember ever feeling close to him when we were children. I think he hates me, but he really doesn't want to hate me.”

~

“... I was rejected by my sister-in-law during my childhood and was made to feel that I was good for nothing.”

~

“... I am not happy with being who I am.”

~

Dearest Friend, many books could be filled with stories like these. What happened? All these hearts began their journey in matrimonial bliss, in families, in homes. What happened?

“God blessed them, saying to them; ‘Be fruitful, multiply, fill the earth and conquer it, be masters of the fish and the sea, the birds of heaven and all living animals on the earth.’ God said; ‘See, I give you all seed bearing plants that are upon the whole earth, and all the trees with seed bearing fruit; this shall be your food. To all wild beasts, all birds of heaven, and all living reptiles on the earth, I give all the foliage of plants for food,’ and so it was. God saw all he had made and indeed it was very good ”<sup>7</sup>

No longer able to endure the cutting pains of these bitter heartbreaks, they fell: in disbelief, in confusion, in loneliness, in solitude, in fear, from abuse, from heart attacks, from cancer and from strokes they fell. With spiritual, emotional, psychiatric problems and physical infirmities they fell. For many, the dream of living in happiness with their beloved had become one long, frightening nightmare. Overcome with pain and confusion, their precious lives were turned upside down.

### **1.2 What to do?**

As I saw all this misery, many questions came to mind. These persons are God's children. They are Princes and Princesses in their Father's kingdom. Why are they not using the gifts they received to protect themselves against these terrible onslaughts? Why do they repeatedly keep falling, enduring more pain and suffering? Why are they not able to discern what is happening? They received great and wonderful treasures not only to survive but also to conquer.<sup>9</sup> Why are they not taking advantage of them? This is not what their heavenly Father wants. The inevitable question surfaced: "Raymond, you know better. You received this knowledge gratuitously. What are you going to do about it?"

They are so many and I am but one person. What could I do? Yet to do nothing was out of the question. This simply did not make sense. Life is wonderful and precious. It must be lived to the full. I did not know what to do. A miracle was needed, but how do miracles happen?

### **1.3 The miracle. Part one, roll up you sleeves.**

Even if I could not save them all, I would try to save as many as I could. I was not going to repeat what the apostles said to our dear Lord at the miracle of the loaves. You will recall— large crowds had left their towns and went on foot to see Jesus. He had pity on them and came ashore to heal the sick and...

"When evening came, the disciples went to him and said, 'This is a lonely place, and the time has slipped by; so send the people away, and they can go to the villages to buy themselves some food'."<sup>10</sup>

*The disciples were asking our dear Lord to send the crowds away so*

world, deal with it yourself. There is no need for persons to be hungry in this world, deal with it yourself. There is no need for persons to be ignorant in this world, deal with it yourself. Christ the Son of God, Christ the Creator, Christ your King is with you. You are made in His image. Do it yourself<sup>11</sup> child of God that you are. Do you not understand? You are God's child!]

But they answered, 'All we have with us is five loaves and two fish.' 'Bring them here to me' he said. He gave orders that the people were to sit on the grass; then he took the five loaves and the two fish, raised his eyes to heaven and said the blessing. And breaking the loaves he handed them to his disciples who gave them to the crowds. They all ate as much as they wanted, and they collected the scraps remaining, twelve baskets full. Those who ate numbered about five thousand men to say nothing of women and children."<sup>12</sup>

I rejoice in this event. Our dear Lord showed me (through His apostles) what I would have done, had I been in their shoes, those wonderful, human, fragile, transparent apostles who played our roles on that stage 2,000 years ago.

#### **1.4 The miracle part two. With Jesus, do it.**

Because of this gospel message, that was exactly what I did. I took my five loaves and two fish... (my meager little experiences). I blessed these with and like Jesus did, then I set out to feed the hungry. As in the gospel passage many ate to their fill.

To do this, I prepared a series of retreats titled "Marriage in the Kingdom" and advertised it in a national Catholic newspaper. Immediately, I received an invitation to give the retreat (a five evening series) in a nearby parish named, "The Immaculate Conception." I was overjoyed since our dear Mother Mary has always been present in my life in a very special way. My heart saw this as a sign of Her approval. Later, it was more advertising and more invitations.

Over the years, giving the retreats was very consoling and very gratifying. Many wonderful things happened. Like the experience the apostles had, no matter how much I gave, there was always more to

Those who make things happen,  
 Those who watch things happen, and  
 Those who say, "What happened?"

This precious gift of life is given to you gratuitously, to make glorious things happen. Your life must be lived. God has placed beautiful persons and awesome wonders in your path. Don't waste time simply watching things happen. You must not wake up years from now, only to realize that these unique opportunities have evaporated into thin air and are gone forever. You are here, now. At this very moment God wills your presence, and because of this, now is your time to live as His Child. But to grow and blossom, you must know who you are, what is yours and what is expected from you. You must know what treasures you have received to help you do the things that only you can do.

Dearest Friend, the experiences in this book are shared with you to help you see and hear before you say, "Yes!" and, "No!" to persons and events in your life. You can and you must use this very precious gift of life to make good things happen for you, for your loved one, for your children and for so many others who depend on you.

Your heritage is to reign and govern, in Christ Jesus, over the affairs of your heavenly Father's Kingdom for His greater glory. This means helping each and every person (beginning with yourself) to take their rightful place in His Holy Court. This is your vocation. This is why you are here and what your dear Lord is asking you to do. Dearest Friend, He has given you everything you need to do this. Do not worry about anything else. You were not given life to suffer heartbreak after heartbreak. "They will never hunger or thirst again; neither the sun nor scorching wind will ever plague them, because the Lamb who is at the throne will be their shepherd and will lead them to springs of living water; and God will wipe away all tears from their eyes."<sup>13</sup> What is at stake is how you use this precious gift of life you are now receiving gratuitously. You can grow and blossom with all the majesty and glory that befit a person of your stature, or you can allow yourself to wither and die.

This sharing with you is to help you find your crown and to wear it. You will discover that you have a sword of awesome power to

if you are not realizing your full potential:  
 if you know this is not how God wants you to live:  
 if you are thirsty for Peace:  
 if you find living tiring and feel insecure:  
 if there is much violence in your life.

Despite your goodwill, you have been saying, "Yes!" and "No!" to the wrong persons and to the wrong events that have come into your life. Yet, it need not and must not be so. From this moment on, you must not take another step unless it is to make good things happen.

Our dear Lord tells us that appearances can be very deceiving. He cautions his apostles (and through them you and me), "Remember, I am sending you out like sheep among wolves; so be cunning as serpents and yet as harmless as doves."<sup>14</sup>

All of your efforts must be to come out of the darkness of solitude and the swamps of despair, onto the wide-open fields and sunny blue skies of your Father's incredible creation. "In the meadows of green grass he lets me lie. To the waters of repose he leads me; there he revives my soul."<sup>15</sup> From this very moment, each step you take must be one that will elevate you to your throne, where you can receive your heritage<sup>16</sup> and exercise your authority to reign as a Monarch in the Kingdom of God. To do this, you must learn how to read important signs.<sup>17</sup>

### **1.6 The bottom line.**

Dearest Friend, it is my wish you soon realize how special and unique you are and that you take your place of honor at your King's side. I want you to know not only what Jesus is giving you to survive, but also how to conquer in His Name.<sup>18</sup> This is your birthright.

Problems are not going to disappear! Problems are wonderful providential opportunities for you to transform and renew creation for your heavenly Father's glory. Imagine... governing with Jesus your King.

Dearest Friend, love from many hearts is responsible for this book being in your hands. Like a child,<sup>19</sup> may your heart be disposed to receive everything your dear Lord has for you. On this journey you will learn where you came from how special you are how much you are



your Father's Kingdom.

Now, let's see what we can learn about having life to the full.<sup>21</sup>  
As you begin your journey, may I bless you, dearest brother and sister  
in the Lord, † in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit,  
Amen.

God be with you.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 2.**

### **Are You Living With Persons or Dying With Things?**

**2.1 Why are there so many heartbreaks?** Because persons are not meeting, communicating and dialoguing with other persons. When this happens, they cannot know and love other persons. When this happens, they cannot have a relationship with other persons or with God who is also a Person(s). When this happens, they cannot grow, blossom and delight in bringing forth much fruit, as our heavenly Father wishes.<sup>22</sup> When this happens, they simply cannot be who they really are, God's Children. When this happens, they cannot realize their full potential. When this happens they are heartbroken and very sad.

Long ago, I discovered that only one out of ten persons can communicate and dialogue with another person; consequently, about one person out of ten can love another person. Are you one of the very few who can communicate and dialogue and love, or are you part of the 90% who do not communicate or dialogue and consequently cannot love... cannot love God, cannot love yourself or cannot love others?

To prove this difficulty in human relationships, before every retreat, (before we committed ourselves to spending five evenings together and possibly waste our week) I carried out the following experiment. Each person sat at a table and closed his or her eyes. A name card was placed in front of each person. Each had a piece of paper and a pencil. Standing on the other side of the table, facing that person, I would then call that person by his or her given name. He or she would then open his or her eyes and look at me. As we looked into each other's eyes (without saying a word) with my finger I would beckon him or her to come to me. That person would then write a one-sentence note describing what he or she saw.

This experiment was carried out two to four times a year, over a 10-12 year period in different English and French parishes throughout Ontario. Consistently time after time, the responses fall into five

2. *confirmed seeing a sign, my beckoning finger,*
3. *saw that the sign was given by “me,”*
4. *saw that the “message was for him or her,” and*
5. *correctly interpreted the sign as, “come to me.”*

For those persons who received my message, each of us person to person, heart to heart, invisible mystery to invisible mystery, became present to the other through our senses— by way of a visible sign. Persons can love one another only when they are present to the Other. We communicated with each other because we looked and saw signs of what the Other was trying to say. When two persons (two spirits incarnate), are consciously present to each other through their visible signs, when they communicate with each other and confirm this communication with each other through these visible signs, this is truly a remarkable event.

### **2.3 Group two, persons not present to self.**

Sadly however, I was not able to communicate with the vast majority of those in the experiment. Many persons did not affirm their own presence, replying instead: “We are being called by you.” or, “You are calling us.” They were simply not conscious of their own unique personal presence. They hid, were lost or took cover in the “group.”

### **2.4 Group three, persons who did not acknowledge my presence.**

Still others did not acknowledge my presence, writing, “I am being asked to go,” or, “I am being called.” They did not deem it necessary to acknowledge “Me” as the “Other” present in this meeting. I was not present in their reply.

### **2.5 Group four, persons who saw neither self nor me.**

Still others did not affirm either their presence or my presence in the encounter, answering: “Come here.” or, “Come.”

### **2.6 Group five, persons who saw only a thing.**

And sadly (very sadly), many persons saw only a thing replying “I see a finger moving”

laughingly. "I have about 300 things to do." he underlined. He saw his job as doing this thing and doing that thing. He did not see his vocation as being responsible for the security of persons living in the community.

**Example.** A newspaper in a sizable city had a full page Christmas greeting for its subscribers. On the page was a large picture of the owner of the paper with his name underneath. Below his picture was a series of smaller pictures of persons who worked there, with their job titles (no names... just job titles) printed underneath. He, was a person. They, were things.

**Example.**

"Hi Yvon."

"Hi Stan, long time no see. How's it going?"

"Fine. I've got a good job, a new car, a few bucks in the bank and a great *little wife*."

**Example:** Before his conversion, St. Augustine went through the same learning pains. In his Confessions he says: "The reason was that I did not know that evil is only the privation of a good, even to the point of complete nonentity. How could I see this, when with eyes I could only see bodies, and with my soul only phantasms."<sup>24</sup>

There are many persons who live with things instead of living with other persons. Their nuances are very subtle. For example, a person wanting to save his or her marriage is not focusing on the Other but on a thing, a project, a *marriage*.

What kind of happiness is there for a person being with another person when he or she:

- (a) is not conscious of his or her own presence?
- (b) is not conscious of the presence of the Other?
- (c) does not see the signs the other gives to communicate and dialogue with him or her?
- (d) does not see either self or others?
- (e) sees a body part as a thing instead of a sign made by another person?

How is loving another person possible under such circumstances? When you see another person, what do you see? The visible is only a sign of the invisible

make decisions based on images, illusions and things that have nothing to do with reality, either in this world and certainly not in the Kingdom of God.

[Whenever a person tries to satisfy a fantasy, heartbreaks galore will abound. Reality can never meet the expectations of a fantasy, for fantasy is constantly redefining itself, it is a bottomless pit. The enlightened heart will not be satisfied with anything less than reality, the Truth, as revealed by our dear Lord. Consequently, God's child will recognize the seductive inducements sung by the sirens of fantasy for what they really are, illusions. With our King as his Light, he will use his eyes to look and see and his ears to listen and hear the Truth— and will govern all his actions accordingly. His house will be built on solid rock and not on shifting sand.<sup>26</sup> ]

We must look and see. We must listen and hear. We must ask questions and confirm the information being exchanged. We must meet the Other at least half way, if we are to bridge the silent chasms that separate us. With Jesus as our Light and the right information, one can discern what to do before acting, before answering, before making important decisions. Otherwise, we will suffer the pains of heartbreak time after time after time.

If you live with things, you will live by yourself, and (as we will see when we examine the consequences of sin) when you live separated from other persons, you will be frustrated, angry— you will starve, wither and die. Our dear Lord tells us, “It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer.”<sup>27</sup>

Dearest Child of God, persons who do not see themselves as persons, cannot communicate as persons with other persons,

Persons who do not see Others as persons, cannot communicate with other persons,

Persons who only see things (i.e. fingers or other body parts) cannot communicate as persons with other persons. They definitely cannot communicate with things. The consequences of living like this are tragic. Dearest Child of God, you need only look and listen, see and

are confused or that there are so many heartbreaks. It is crucial to know if you are living your one and only life with images, with things or with persons. Your happiness depends on it.

### **2.10 Flesh and blood, window to the invisible Other.**

When you kiss your loved one, you bring your lips to hers. This is not simply for the sake of skin touching skin. This wonderful event allows one mystery in flesh and blood to meet (in a very intimate way) another mystery in flesh and blood. The pleasure and joy of kissing the Other is in feeling the softness and the warmth of the other Person, THROUGH his or her lips, touching the mystery of the Other THROUGH flesh and blood. Remember what Jesus tells us, “It is the Spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer.”

Lips enable lovers to experience, in a very special and wonderful way, a MEETING with the Other, a communion of hearts. To simply see and feel lips is to simply see and feel flesh and blood. When this happens, we do not see, touch and feel the lips as a special visible sign of the invisible presence, beauty, loveliness and mystery of the Other. “It is the Spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer.”

Many persons do not know each other because they are living with flesh and blood and not with another person. They are living with things. Many persons go through life seeing only boys or girls, men or women. These persons are living with flesh and blood and not with other persons. Flesh and blood cannot speak, only persons can speak. My lips cannot communicate, they are part of a transmission system for ME to be able to talk with YOU. You must live with other persons and not with flesh and blood– if you do not you will surely die of heartbreak. Why? Because we are made in the image of God, who lives in union and in communion with PERSONS, not with things. Flesh and blood makes you visible to the other, and makes the other visible to you, but “It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer.”

Dearest Child of God, flesh and blood cannot speak, only persons can speak. You cannot have an interpersonal relationship with body parts or with things. Body parts cannot love. Things cannot love.

the Other is. This is the only way we can make contact with the Other; this is the only way we can meet that person, that Other. What is visible, therefore, is a sign of the invisible, the first cause without which there would be no person, no visible and no sign. Your hands, arms, head, torso and legs are visible signs of YOU. They are the signs of life, spirit and mystery that YOU are, for, “It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer.”

When more of Me is visible to you, there is more of Me you can see. When you see more of me, there is more of Me you can meet. When you meet more of me, there is more of Me you can know. When you know more of Me, there is more of Me you can love. How can you love Me if you do not know Me? How can you know Me if you do not see Me? How can I love You if I do not know You? How can I know You if I do not see You? How can I see You if you do not give me a sign that tells me you are there?

Dearest Friend, the adventure of seeing, meeting, knowing and loving the Other in Christ Jesus is *the event* of life and living. There is no greater happiness. But before we can meet the Other, we must see the signs that he or she gives. Look, listen and touch the visible body to meet the invisible mystery and spirit that lives therein.<sup>28</sup>

Dear Child of God, visible signs are the only way the invisible mystery that the Other is can communicate with you. If you do not see and respond to his or her signs, you will never meet the Other— never.

### **2.12 After 35 years, they finally meet.**

A good example of this (meeting the Other) took place when I gave a retreat in a parish in Southern Ontario. It was Friday evening and we were closing the week (as we always do) with mass and a little party. We do this to celebrate the presence of our God who is so close to us and cares for us so much. “I will live in your midst.”<sup>29</sup> I went from person to person thanking them for their participation. One couple was obviously much older than the others. They had beautiful rosy red cheeks, fiery twinkling eyes and were very much full of life.

“How long have you been married?” I asked.

“Thirty-five years.” she replied.

“What in the world are you doing here?” I asked

as a “breadwinner” and not as a “person.”

### **2.13 Speed is an obstacle to meeting the Other.**

Meeting another person takes time. As we will see when we look at the consequences of sin, speed in one's life is a visible sign of a person not walking with his or her heavenly Father. Our King tells us, “I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End.”<sup>30</sup> Because we all are members of the Body of Christ and share in His Spirit, in Christ Jesus, we too can say, “I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End.” So why the need for speed? Our dear Lord also tells us, “It is already done.”<sup>31</sup> So, why the need for speed in our lives? Only Satan and those he has drawn to his side are speed demons, for their days are numbered. Ours are not.

Our resurrected nature is to be like Christ, sharing in His Beginning and End, loving the Lord our God with all our heart, with all our soul and with all our mind and loving our neighbor as we love self.<sup>32</sup> This love is personal, intimate and it takes time. Indeed, love requires an eternity to give. This is what makes Love, Love. As we will see when we look at the effects of sin, speed poisons this process. Speed is not a divine attribute. Speed is irreconcilable, incongruous, and an opposite to the eternal.

We must see the visible as a sign of the invisible, and take the time to meet the other through these visible signs- otherwise, there is no value to reading any further.

### **2.14 Communication is through our senses.**

What does, “see the visible as a sign of the invisible mean?” Because we live in flesh and blood, we are spirits incarnate. As spirits incarnate we have only one way to communicate and dialogue with other persons, through visible signs. As obvious as it is, it bears being repeated: to communicate and dialogue with other persons, we need to give them visible signs. If they want to communicate and dialogue with us, they must give us visible signs. To communicate, we need visible signs that can be “seen” through our senses.

### **2.15 Meeting the Other means taking risks**



me.” and so on. Yes it does mean taking risks, but you will not discover and know who you are unless you see who you are. You can only see who you are through the eyes of other persons, as you see their response, their relationships and their reactions to you.

As these meeting experiences take place, one learns, tries again, learns some more, tries again and learns again. This will continue for the rest of your life and always with some risk. However, as you grow and blossom, the risks should become smaller and smaller, the learning experiences greater and greater. When others step out of their skin to reveal who they are to you, they also take risks. Meet them lovingly. Do not frighten them back into their shell, they may never risk trying to meet you again.

### **2.16 Jealous of the tomatoes.**

One afternoon while in my bedroom changing my shirt, I looked out the window and saw Florence working in the garden. She was in the tomato patch. I saw her cultivating the plants, pruning them, straightening them up, pulling out weeds and caring for them with all her loving heart. Suddenly I was jealous.

“How come she's giving all this love to those tomatoes and not to me? Why doesn't she love me like she loves those tomato plants?” I was upset and very angry with her. I felt she was cheating me of her love. I felt that she considered the tomato plants more deserving of her love than I. (I'll pause here while you have a chuckle or a tear.)

When she returned to the house, my first instinct was to blast her for loving those tomato plants more than she loved me. On reflection, however, I decided not to say anything, but I was very jealous and very angry. Then I saw what was happening. An inner wall was building up which was going to divide Florence and me. Prompts that divide and separate do not come from the Holy Spirit. This was a temptation from the Serpent. Pride or no pride, I had to act fast if I was going to minimize the damage. With anger building within, I decided to share my feelings with her. She could hardly believe what she heard. When I finished, she replied, “Raymond, don't you know I'm growing these tomatoes for you?”

Hearing this I melted in shame when I saw how foolish I was

### **2.17 Visible signs, life line for survival.**

Dearest Friend, if you are to walk this earth as God's Child, to be about your Father's business with Jesus,<sup>33</sup> to reign effectively as a Monarch in your corner of God's Kingdom, you must open your eyes and ears and use all your senses:

a) to see the signs other persons are giving you to communicate with you and to be in communion with you, and

b) to acknowledge their signs and respond with signs of your own, if you are to experience union through human communion.

Dearest Child of God, when you want to dialogue with others;

Do you give them the visible signs they need to see and understand you?

Do you see the visible signs others are giving you to communicate with you?

Do you confirm with each other on what messages are being given?

When you see the visible sign, you can meet the invisible cause, always a person. You can then respond to all the wonderful things happening in your life. If you do not see the visible, you will not see the invisible first cause, always a person. If you do not see persons, you will not be able to live in a community of persons, you will not be able to communicate with persons, you will not be able to share with persons, you will not be able to love persons, you will not be able to help persons and you will not be able to receive love and help from persons.

Such an individual cannot live what he or she is, a person in the image of our God who lives in a community of Persons, doing all these things and more. Unless you see the visible as a sign of the invisible, you will not be able to live a life where you can grow and blossom.

Unless you see the visible sign as the presence of the invisible person, you will not have the happiness of loving the Lord your God (a Person) with all your heart, with all your soul and with all your mind. You will also be incapable of loving your neighbor and of loving yourself.<sup>34</sup> If you are unable do these things, you will not be able to live who you are, a person made in the image of God and you will suffer many heartbreaks. You will be incapable of radiating all the perfume and

this very moment) is sustaining you. From this day on, let your spouse know you are here, let your children know you are here, let God know you are here- let the world know you are here. Make yourself visible through all the signs they need to see you, for you are God's child. We are not alive as persons if we are unable to communicate and dialogue with other persons. Do you believe this?

**2.18 The bottom line, what you see is what you get.**

If one is part of the 90% who do not meet, who do not communicate and who do not dialogue with other persons, how can such a person meet, know and love another? How in the world can such a person meet oneself, know oneself and love oneself? How can such a person raise a family of persons? Your first line of defense against confusion, disappointment, frustration, error and continuing needless heart-breaks is to:

-look and see the visible signs that the Other is giving you (either actively or passively);

-listen and hear what the Other is saying (or not saying) and;

-ask questions and confirm the meaning of the signs and information given (or not given) and then reply.

Your ability to know and to love the Other will be directly related to your ability to be present, to communicate and dialogue with the Other- all of this depends on your ability to look and see, to listen and hear and to respond to the visible signs the Other is giving to you. God be with you.

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

### **Chapter 3.**

#### **Dialogue is to Love, what Blood is to Life**

##### **3.1 You, Others and God.**

If not being able to meet other persons because of your inability to see the visible signs of their presence isn't bad enough, consider this: persons who cannot dialogue as persons with other persons cannot dialogue with the Holy Spirit, neither can they dialogue with their King and neither can they dialogue with their heavenly Father. Why? Because They too are Persons. Moreover, our heavenly Father, our dear Lord and the Holy Spirit cannot dialogue with them. How can you reign (as Prince or Princess) in your realm of the Kingdom of God if you cannot communicate and dialogue effectively with God's children, your own brothers and sisters? The answer is very simple, you cannot. But you were born to reign, "Be fruitful, multiply, fill the earth and conquer it."<sup>35</sup>

The ability to communicate and dialogue is indispensable for Life in the Kingdom of God. The Bible is full of pleas and supplications to men, to hear the word of God. Here are but a few:

"... Listen you Kings."<sup>36</sup>

"... Israel, if you would only listen to me."<sup>37</sup>

Jesus tells us, "Why are you talking about having no bread? Do you not yet understand? Have you no perception? Are your minds closed? Have you eyes that do not see, ears that do not hear? Or do you not remember? When I broke the five loaves among the five thousand, how many baskets full of scraps did you collect?" And they answered, 'Seven'. Then he said to them, "Are you still without perception?"<sup>38</sup>

And again, when two disciples of John the Baptist asked our dear Lord, "Are you the one who is to come or have we to wait for someone else?" he replied, "... Go back and tell John what you have seen and heard: the blind see again, the lame walk, lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised to life, the Good News is proclaimed to the poor and happy is the man who does not lose faith

Light, your Companion and your Counselor?

If we are unable to meet our loved one or other persons, we are unable to meet the Father, the Son or the Holy Spirit, for They too are Persons.

If we are unable to love other persons, we are unable to love the Father, the Son or the Holy Spirit, for They too are Persons. This is what John meant when he said, "A man who cannot love the brother that he can see cannot love God whom he has never seen."<sup>40</sup>

If we are unable to help other persons, we are unable to help the Father, the Son or the Holy Spirit, for They too are Persons.

If we are unable to thank other persons, we are unable to thank the Father, the Son or the Holy Spirit, for They too are Persons.

If we are unable to receive help from other persons, we are unable to receive help from the Father, the Son or the Holy Spirit who are also Persons. Under such conditions, you cannot be who you are, a person created in the image of God, and your life will be filled with heart-breaks.

Father John C. Haughey, s.j. says this about Jesus, "Through the relationships that developed between Jesus and others, the Spirit taught him. A capacity for being in relationship with another or others in such wise that one comes to self understanding through these is by no means automatic or universal. Relationship in this sense means a quality of interaction that exists when two people are present to one another as who they are. There are degrees of presence to one another or degrees of mutuality in relationships. There can also be false relationships, ones in which I am present to the other according to the other's expectations of me or according to my expectations of the other. There are exploitive liaisons too, which stimulate the experience of relationship but serve merely to widen the moat around the person and others and deepen the division between the authentic self and the performing self."

Father Haughey continues, "Every genuine relationship is a gift of God and opens out to God. Each deepens one's ability to receive the presence of the other as other. At the same time it develops one's ability to be fully present to another as oneself. **Thus, each true relationship expands one's capacity to stand in openness to God as**

“Yes.”

“What is it? Paper and ink?”

“Yes.”

“What is it? A book?”

“Yes.”

“What is it? The Bible?”

“Yes.”

“It is all that and more. It is the Word of God.” The visible is always a sign of the invisible.

Dearest Child of God, what you see IS what you get. Are you going to live with things or with persons made in God's image? “It is the spirit (invisible) that gives life, the flesh (visible) has nothing to offer.”<sup>42</sup> Parenthesized words are mine.

### **3.2 Dialogue between sweethearts.**

Since dialogue is everything, what are some of the obstacles to communicating with each other.

About 80% of the population are either not aware of their presence or of the presence of others or both.

About 10% of the population live with things.

This leaves 10% of the population who are able to communicate and dialogue with another person.

Consider further, the different values persons have where their security is concerned. Here are a few.

Some see health as their security.

Some see money as their security.

Some see power as their security.

Some see intelligence as their security.

Some see challenge as their security.

Some see authority as their security.

Some see position as their security.

Some see solitude or isolation as their security.

Some see beauty as their security, and so on.

Consider further that some persons make decisions entirely by what they see, while others make decisions entirely by what they hear.

*Consider still further how each person has been reared differ-*

the sacraments, and receive counsel from their Mother Mary and give praise and glory to God in all things.

Now each loving heart can share the same vision with the Other. Each can talk the same language as the Other, each can share a common Security, and consequently live together in real Peace, a peace that will allow their love for each other to blossom to heights undreamed of, together in this world and in the next with the entire royal Family, for ever and ever and ever. Amen.

How many factors there may be in the marital equation is not of concern. To live our lives as prophets, priests and kings (which is our heritage), we have Jesus' prayer as our hope, "Father, may they be one in us, as you are in me and I am in you, so that the world may believe it was you who sent me. I have given them the glory you have given to me, that they may be one as we are one. With me in them and you in me, may they be so completely one that the world will realize it was you who sent me."<sup>43</sup>

~

### **3.3 The bottom line.**

It is only through dialogue, that the Other can be present to you. To not listen to the Other, is to deny the Other not only the right to be present to you and be with you, but it also denies the Other the opportunity to have a relationship with you. To not listen to the Other is to be unable to meet the Other, unable to know the Other and consequently, unable to love the Other. To not listen to the Other is to live with the Other as a flesh and blood object and not as a person. To not listen to the Other is to deny the Other the opportunity to grow and blossom as a person. To not listen to the Other is rude, cruel and insensitive. This is not what our King taught us. Such an attitude can cause heartbreak after heartbreak to the Other, even paralyze or destroy life and creativity in the Other. Not listening to the Other literally mocks God by degrading, cheapening and humiliating this heart He has placed next to yours so that HE COULD LOVE YOU, personally and intimately. Dialogue is to love, what blood is to life. Indispensable! There is no substitute! Like life-giving blood, dialogue must flow, pumped by a heart full of loving concern, free of contamination and full of healthy properties bringing life to the heart and to the spirit of the

them.

If you would like to know how much love there is between your pastor and you, consider how much time he spends in dialogue with you<sup>44</sup> or how much time you spend in dialogue with him.<sup>45</sup>

If you are to have a real relationship with an Other, you must have a relationship with a person, a spirit incarnate, two invisibles meeting through two visibles.

If you are to have a relationship with your heavenly Father, your King and the Holy Spirit, you must first have a relationship with persons, for They are Persons.

If your heavenly Father is to have a relationship with you, if our dear Lord is to have a relationship with you, if the Holy Spirit is to have a relationship with you, if your Mother Mary is to have a relationship with you— you must first have relationships with persons. Every time you meet an “Other” you should be fully conscious of the presence of the Holy Spirit who is making all this possible that you may grow and blossom as God’s Child.

If you are to live your life as God's Child (which is why you have life, the reason why you are here) you must be fully present to others, then and only then will you eventually be fully present to God. As Father Haughey says, “The role of the Spirit is peculiarly directed to the area of intersubjectivity, creating a betweenness where there was isolation... it is the Spirit who made the presence of one to the other possible.”

Unless we allow the Holy Spirit access to our heart,<sup>46</sup> we will not be present to others. If we are not present to Others (especially our spouse and our children), we will not be present to our Lord the Holy Spirit, to Jesus our Brother, to God our Father and to dearest Mary, our spiritual Mother. Failure to have these *normal human* relationships with Others, with Jesus our King, with our heavenly Father, with the Holy Spirit and dearest Mother Mary, is to live this priceless wonderful life, as one, long, continuous, painful heartbreak.

Dialogue is to love, what blood is to life.



This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 4.**

### **Creation, Visible Sign of Our Invisible God.**

#### **4.1 A universe just for you.**

Dearest Child of God, before you arrived your heavenly Father created the most beautiful universe you ever saw, filling it with every conceivable wonder. With your loved one go to the countryside for a day or a weekend. Together look and see it, listen and hear it, touch and taste it, marvel and wonder at this incredibly beautiful creation you live in.

Look and see the towering mountains.

Look and see the gentle blue sky.

Look and see the massive clouds moving tons of water to where it is most needed (without noise I might add).

Look and see the living green grass, every blade part of a regal rug for your royal feet.

Look and see the flowers in their splendor of colors, enjoy their exotic fragrances, all there for your pleasure.

Look and see the insects... the grasshoppers, the bees, the dragonflies, the butterflies... and wonder how He who created the continents and the planets could make such tiny creatures.

Consider all the food the earth produces. How did He discern the taste for that first orange? What divine yearning blessed the ruby raspberry with its most regal flavor?

Blessed Creature, listen and hear the music of the songbirds and marvel at how He who made lightning, thunder and volcanoes could include such sweet delights in His repertoire. Never forget, you are the reason why all this was done.

More wonderful still, all these visible signs reveal the presence of the invisible person of Jesus, through whom all things came to be.<sup>47</sup> "He is the radiant light of God's glory and the perfect copy of his nature, sustaining the universe by his powerful command."<sup>48</sup>

Dearest Child of God, look at each marvel in this fantastic

Enjoy the music of His brooks.  
 See His Harmony.  
 See all the signs of His Life.  
 See the power of His will.  
 Marvel at His versatility.  
 Marvel at His attention to detail.  
 Bow before His unfathomable knowledge.  
 See the length, width and height of your God.  
 See Jesus' power.  
 See His gentleness.  
 See His concerns.  
 See His strength.  
 See the organization of our God.  
 See the anger of our God.  
 See the violence of our God.  
 See the musicality of our God.  
 See the imagination of our God.  
 See the patience of our God.  
 See the order, beauty and color of our God.

See His creation, made for you, and adore your God who Is who Was and Who forever shall Be. These are some of the personality and character traits, some of the visible signs in His creation that reveal the invisible presence of the Person of Christ Jesus we call our King. "It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer."<sup>49</sup>

And, because all of this was prepared for you, given to you gratuitously, see in His creation your dear Lord's personal Love for You. How personal? Full of awe and wonder of His infinite Majesty, of His unspeakable glory and of His blinding splendor, look deeply into your beloved's eyes and see the beauty of God. See His personal, intimate presence there to care for you, to love you and to sustain you— where love is, God is, for "God is love."<sup>50</sup>

Prayers that please God are those made by sweethearts in marriage. Awakening in His creation each morning, each comforted by the warmth of the other, heads together on the same pillow, both rested and renewed, they give thanks for His love— a love that He so personally, intimately and generously brings to each of them through crea-

With lights dimmed, holding hands, the couples listened... listen.

“Dearest Son, Dearest Daughter:

Look at my creation which surrounds you and see what I have done for you. It is for you, my Son and for you, my Daughter, that I brought light into the darkness. See the wonders of my Love which I have made visible to you. It is for you, my Son and for you, my Daughter, that I have divided the days from the nights. Awaken fresh and renewed to the splendors of my creation. It is for you, my Son and for you, my Daughter, that I have raised the land from the waters. Walk and see all the wonders my heart delights in bringing to you. It is for you, my Son and for you, my Daughter, that I have made the earth full and rich, a treasure chest to fascinate you and to delight your hearts.

For you, my dear children, I have made the heavens a jeweled dome. Gaze upon it and marvel at the length, width, height and depth of the home I have built for you.

Dearest children, I have filled the waters with living creatures. The heavens I have filled with birds and have placed all kinds of life on earth with you. I brought forth every molecule, every blade of grass, every flake of snow, every drop of water, every leaf, every ray of light and every conceivable wonder just for you. My blessed children, reign over them all.

Look at each other and see the presence of my hand. My Son, look at my Daughter. Look at this loving heart in whom I delight to be with and to love through you. Look at her hand, made to be in yours, and yours to be in hers, that together neither will be empty of my Presence. My Daughter, look at my Son. Through you I have chosen to walk with him, to be with him and to love him.

Look into each other's eyes, my children, and see how close I am to you. Discover together all the ways I have chosen to love you. In all things know that I have placed them there for your pleasure in government. In your knowledge of each other, you will see how I foresaw your every need.

Dearest Son, dearest Daughter, you are the first and the last. There will never be another like you; you are my pride and joy, my precious delights. I look for me and you will find my presence still more re-

Daughter, everything I have created I have given to you. My children, embrace each other here in my beautiful garden. In the union of your hearts, let me walk with you always where our Love will bring forth Life.

Dearest Son and Daughter, you are the fruits of my Love and my Life. Stay with me, love me, as I seek only to stay with you and to love you. Dearest children, my blessings are on you, always.”

#### **4.3 How much closer to you can God get?**

Dearest Child of God, how much closer can God get? With your loved one, discover together all the wonders of this incredible creation given to you by your heavenly King. Discover His love and concern for your welfare through His creation and in each other.

[The words in John Denver's love song “Follow Me.” express what I think our dear Lord would sing to us. Imagine Him telling you of His desire to show you everything He has done for you, then wanting to let you show Him what you can do with His gifts, as “He then follows you.”]

Sweethearts can only know real love and real happiness in love when their hearts are in peace. But their hearts can only be in peace when they are in security and they can only be in security when they walk hand in hand with their heavenly King, He who owns it all.<sup>52</sup>

#### **4.4 The bottom line.**

Each day, dearest Friend, look, see and marvel at the beauty and splendor of His creation made just for you. In it, see the visible signs of the invisible presence and personality of your heavenly King. Give Him praise and glory and benediction for all that He is doing for you. Keep your hand in His always. Look and see everything He has done for you. Look and see all the ways He has chosen to love you. You really are “the pupil of his eye.”<sup>53</sup>

“Great are your achievements, Yahweh, immensely deep your thoughts!”<sup>54</sup>

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 5.**

### **Our First Parents and What They Did.**

#### **5.1 Father Adam and Mother Eve.**

Dearest Child of God, we have seen how important it is to open our eyes and ears to see and hear the splendor of creation. Through it, see and hear our dear Lord. He designed it and made it all possible. Doesn't it just take your breath away?

Where do you fit in all of this? How can you blossom in such a creation? What are you to do? Where are you to go? How will you get there and who will go with you? What are your responsibilities? What talents do you have to do these things?

You must first have a good look at where you came from and the world you were born into. We begin with our first parents, Father Adam and Mother Eve. You will recall in Genesis 1:1-25, our heavenly Father made humankind in the image of himself, and then said these loving words to our Father Adam and our Mother Eve, "you may eat indeed of all the trees in the garden. Nevertheless of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you are not to eat, for on the day you eat of it you shall most surely die."<sup>55</sup>

#### **5.2 What "eat of all the trees in the garden" means.**

"Eat of all of the trees in the garden," means that our first parents could explore, discover and use everything in our heavenly Father's wonderful creation. He made it for them and for you. He made everything for our pleasure in government. It's all there for you and me to reign over.

#### **5.3 The one tree you must not eat from.**

You may "eat of all of the trees in the garden," He said, but you may not eat from "the tree of the knowledge of good and evil." This means they must not do bad things saying they are good things or say good things are bad things. In other words, moral autonomy is our

#### **5.4 Why God placed a limit on our first parents.**

Why did our heavenly Father admonish them so? To test them? To tease them? To toy with them? To keep them in their place? To show them who is boss? Of course not. A father does not do these kinds of things to his children. Very simply, our heavenly Father did not want them to die. In His Love, He made them in His image, to live and to walk with him. He wants them filled with awe and wonder and to marvel at all He has done for them.

#### **5.5 Moral autonomy is not ours.**

God told our first parents that should they claim it as their right to arbitrarily define what is right and what is wrong, they would, in effect, be setting themselves up as God. This rejection would separate them from Him, from Love and from Life. On the day they choose to arbitrarily define what is right and what is wrong, they shall most surely die. On the day they, “eat of it” they shall most surely die. On the day they decide to sin against God they shall most surely die. Why? No one can live without God who is Truth and Love and His Life that gushes therefrom.

#### **5.6 The voice of Deception.**

How do we eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? We do this by doing things contrary to our heavenly Father’s loving counsels. We do this by believing the Tempter instead of God— our conscience.<sup>57</sup> Here are but a few examples of the arguments the Tempter uses as he tries to convince you that YOU have the right to do what YOU want and not what God wants.

He will tell you:

“It’s your body, you do what you want!”

“It’s your life, you have the right to decide!”

“What do they know about it?”

“It’s your money, spend it any way you please!”

“That’s his problem, why worry about him?”

“Let them look after themselves!”

“What they don’t know won’t hurt them!”

“You’re old enough go ahead!”

### **5.7 The fruit of sin is death.**

What happens when in response to the counsels of the Tempter you agree that you (and not God) have the right to decide what is right and what is wrong? I tremble each time I read that sentence. You die. Our heavenly Father said, "... on the day you eat of it, you shall most surely die."<sup>58</sup> On the day that you arbitrarily decide that something bad is good or that something good is bad, you shall surely die.

### **5.8 Sin kills.**

How will sin kill you? The process begins with temptation and ends in terrible anguish and despair. We will examine this in detail. Remember, our Father's admonition is as true for you and me today as it was for our first parents, Father Adam and Mother Eve. You must understand this if you are to reign with the other Monarchs in the Kingdom of God. I repeat, His admonition is as true for you and me today as it was for our first parents. The consequences of not believing our heavenly Father are serious and very frightening.

### **5.9 The bottom line.**

Turning your heart from God by saying, "Yes!" to the prompts of the Tempter, begins a chain reaction of very painful heartbreaks that will turn the rest of your life inside out and upside down. Everything you then do will be an opposite to what you expected from life and for your efforts. This happens because saying, "No." to our dear Lord and saying, "Yes." to the Tempter is to live what you are not, a lie. When you become a living lie, you then live in a world of opposites, a world without knowledge of the Truth, a world without the solid footing you need to prosper.

You will follow men when you should be with Jesus, your King.

Your life will be in black and white<sup>59</sup> when it should be in living color.<sup>60</sup>

You will live for earthly things when you should be living for heavenly treasures.

You will slowly die instead of enjoying the happiness and exhilaration of life. Your eyes will sadly turn downward instead of happily

those of the dying<sup>61</sup> instead of those of the living. If you allow the Tempter access to your Kingdom, you cannot even hope to succeed, to surpass yourself, to blossom and bloom. If you allow the Tempter to live in your Heart... in your Kingdom... in your Home— you cannot have a blessed and fruitful marriage and know the sweetness of Love.

And so your sin begins to pursue its terminal objective, to separate you and isolate you from receiving eternal Life from the Heart of your host body, Jesus. If you persist, your sin (your, “No.” to His Love) will eventually enclose you. Like a cancer, it will completely isolate you from God's life-giving grace. You will then shrivel and die in your own lonely, dried up world of, “Me.” Now, let's look at what happens when the Tempter bangs on your door.

†



This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 6.**

### **Temptation Can Mesmerize, Poison and Kill.**

#### **6.1 Satan's approach.**

How can temptation mesmerize, poison and kill you? Your spouse? Your children? Your dreams? To answer this and other related questions, let's see what our first parents did and what followed.

Genesis tells us, "The serpent was the most subtle of all the wild beasts that Yahweh God had made. It asked the woman, 'Did God really say you were not to eat from any of the trees in the garden?'"

The woman answered the serpent, 'We may eat the fruit of the trees in the garden. But of the fruit of the tree in the middle of the garden God said, You must not eat it, nor touch it, under pain of death.'

Then the serpent spoke to the woman, 'No! You will not die! God knows in fact that on the day you eat it your eyes will be opened and you will be like gods, knowing good and evil.'

The woman saw that the tree was good to eat and pleasing to the eye, and that it was desirable for the knowledge that it could give. So she took some of its fruit and ate it. She gave some also to her husband who was with her, and he ate it. Then the eyes of both of them were opened and they realized they were naked. So they sewed fig-leaves together to make themselves loin cloths.

The man and his wife heard the sound of Yahweh God walking in the garden in the cool of the day and they hid from Yahweh God among the trees of the garden. But Yahweh God called to the man.

'Where are you?' he asked.

'I heard the sound of you in the garden;' he replied. 'I was afraid because I was naked, so I hid.'

'Who told you that you were naked?' he asked, 'Have you been eating of the tree I forbade you to eat?'

The man replied, 'It was the woman you put with me; she gave me the fruit and I ate it.'

Suppose someone said to you, “Her teeth are like pearls, her eyes like diamonds, her cheeks like peaches and her hair like threads of gold,” you would know this was not a physical description of a real person but a description of that person's beauty, using words to describe loveliness in relation to things we know of, things we can relate to. This is an example of how romantic language describes how one might see another.

### **6.3 Religious language.**

And so it is with the Bible, which was written in part using religious language. This helps to express the Divine more clearly and to make the Kingdom of God more visible. In much the same way as we use romantic language to describe the beauty of an Other, religious language describes our heavenly Father, His Love for us and His Kingdom.

### **6.4 Did serpents really talk?**

Religious language describes the Tempter as a serpent— still, subtle, mysterious, secretive, quiet, poised, watching, waiting, all the while keeping you locked in its hostile stare. Then, at the appropriate moment, with lightning speed, it strikes.

By symbolizing the Tempter as a serpent, religious language vividly describes the personality of the Evil One. He secretly schemes on how to inject the poison of sin into your soul. In so doing, not only would he destroy both your body and your soul but he would also break your heavenly Father's heart, for you are the “pupil of his eye.”<sup>64</sup>

### **6.5 First sign of the Tempter's presence.**

The Tempter's style or approach is to confront you with a question. This subtle pressure (forcing you to dialogue with him through your answer) puts you in a position where you are suddenly and unexpectedly reflecting on a proposal that is in direct opposition with your conscience and with whom you are.

When our first Mother Eve heard the question, “Did God really say you were not to eat from any of the trees in the garden?”<sup>65</sup> she must have experienced a very disturbing malaise. It is most disconcerting to

persons in your Kingdom.

### **6.6 Importance of not responding to the Tempter.**

The question the Tempter asked our first mother was: “Did God really say you were not to eat from any of the trees in the garden?” Notice the casual tone of his question. He makes it appear as a bit of innocent chitchat. This is where our Mother Eve made her fatal mistake. She replied to the Tempter, she dialogued with the Evil One. Would you pick up a poisonous snake simply to see what it feels like? Of course not. Yet, our Mother Eve did much worse when she answered the Tempter's leading question.

When we say, “Yes.” to temptation (choosing our will over God's loving admonition) we sever our relationship with God. This causes a bitter heartbreak between the Creator and the Creature. Though our baptism resurrected us into the glorious body of Christ, temptation (because of the freedom given to us and is required for love to be true and meaningful) is still a real danger. It is as real for you and for me today as it was for our first parents, Father Adam and Mother Eve.

At all times, keep your heart focused on your King. Let Him draw you to Him. Pray with a steadfast heart. Walk only with the Lord. Let no one sway, charm or entice you from His side. “Watch and pray that you may not enter into temptation; the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.”<sup>66</sup>

### **6.7 You are not God.**

If you even listen to the Tempter, you acknowledge the possibility that God may be wrong and that the Tempter may be right. To use your free will in this way is to set yourself up as God knowing better than your heavenly Father. Worse still, it's an act which supposes to some degree that your heavenly Father was misleading you, lying to you, the supreme insult to our God who is Truth. Now dearest Friend, let us see how believing the Tempter and allowing the poison of sin to come into our heart, can cause so many heartbreaks.

### **6.8 Our Mother's first move**

Father said.

### **6.9 The Tempter's response.**

Having now engaged our first mother in an exchange, with a second hypnotic stare (more captivating than the first) the Serpent comes a little closer, trying to convince her that he is an understanding friend, one she can trust. He tells her, "No! You will not die! God knows in fact that on the day you eat it your eyes will be opened and you will be like gods, knowing good and evil." Genesis then tells us, "The woman saw that the tree was good to eat and pleasing to the eye, and that it was desirable for the knowledge that it could give. So she took some of its fruit and ate it. She gave some also to her husband who was with her, and he ate it."<sup>68</sup>

### **6.10 Head (logic) in battle with the heart (Love).**

In response to warnings from our conscience (God's presence in us) telling us that what we are pondering is wrong, logic goes into action and comes out swinging. Loaded with cerebral arguments, logic challenges your heavenly Father's loving admonition (our conscience). This rebellious attitude reveals the presence of the Tempter within. We hear him screaming out OUR right to moral autonomy, OUR right to do what WE want to do, as WE see fit. Such encouragement is comparable to the Serpent saying to us what he said to our Mother Eve, "No! You will not die!"<sup>69</sup> You can almost hear him adding, "*Trust me.*"

### **6.11 Why sin is compared to a fruit.**

Because in her heart our Mother Eve has already turned her back on our heavenly Father's loving admonition, she ponders further the sinful act being contemplated. Genesis continues, "The woman saw that the tree was good to eat and pleasing to the eye, and that it was desirable for the knowledge that it could give."<sup>70</sup>

Genesis compares the attraction of sin with one's attraction to fresh fruit. Our first Mother Eve sees sin as pleasing to the eye (like fruit), mouth watering, sweet, juicy, refreshing and good. Sin, in the eye of the sinner, is appealing, delicious. In her heart, in anticipation of the pleasure of sinning, she can already taste it. Genesis says "it was de-

thing to do and doesn't do it commits a sin.”<sup>71</sup> James does not say sin is the wrong thing to do and does it, but defines sin as knowing the “right thing to do and doesn't do it.”

St. Thomas Aquinas says, “Disorder is found in the internal motion of the soul before it is found in the external bodily act. In internal motions, the appetite is first moved towards the end before it is moved to seek things on account of an end, and therefore the first human sin was connected with this first desire of an inordinate end. But man was so constituted in the state of innocence that there was no rebellion of the flesh against the spirit. Hence the first disorder of the human appetite could not consist in desiring some sensible good towards which the concupiscence of the flesh tended beyond the order of reason. Hence the first disorder must have been an inordinate desire of some spiritual good... above measure and this belongs to pride. Hence it is clear that the first sin of the first man was pride.”<sup>72</sup>

The Catechism of the Catholic Church defines sin as: “... an offense against reason, truth and right conscience; it is failure in genuine love for God and neighbor caused by a perverse attachment to certain goods. It wounds the nature of man and injures human solidarity. It has been defined as an utterance, a deed, or a desire contrary to the eternal law.”<sup>73</sup>

Worse than sinning is to willfully expose oneself to temptation. Sinning begins when one wistfully ponders the Tempter’s invitation. The person who wants to exercise all of his or her priestly duties and royal functions will confess and repent every occasion where one has allowed the Tempter access to his or her heart.

At this point, in her heart, our dearest first Mother Eve has already turned her back on her heavenly Father. She has but to carry out the physical act itself, “So she took some of its fruit and ate it.”<sup>74</sup> The interior yearning was now consummated and made visible by the exterior act of doing. She made the invisible visible. Now, God’s creature, our first mother, was now going to die because of her sin. Because of this, we, her children, were born as strangers to the same God who gave our first mother life.

**6.14 The bottom line.**

All our pains, sufferings and heartbreaks come from not living in the joyful embrace of our heavenly Father. I repeat, all our pains, sufferings and heartbreaks come from not living in the joyful embrace of our heavenly Father.

When we longingly yearn for anything other than Him as the Treasure of our heart, we subject our soul (and through it our body) to the scorching pains of separation from Him, separation from Love, separation from Truth and separation from Life. A cut to our physical body warns us through pain of the potential danger ahead. A heartfelt desire for anything other than Him also warns us, through much spiritual pain and suffering, of the potential danger ahead.

When physically injured, we see to our injury before infection sets in otherwise, we risk being in a life-threatening situation. When we sin, we must also see to it very quickly. Injuries to the soul, like injuries to the body, not only bring much spiritual pain and suffering but, if not attended to, will lead to certain death of soul and of the body, visible sign of the invisible soul.

Dearest Child of God, it is not your lot to live your life in pain and suffering, but to have life and to have it to the full.<sup>76</sup> Never turn your heart from your heavenly Father, from our dear Lord or from the Holy Spirit. Never even consider responding to the Tempter, you have seen how he deceives. Turn from him at the first sign of his presence, otherwise the consequence will be a life filled with heartbreaks and an anguish so severe, you will eventually die, soul and body.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 7.**

### **Visible Signs of Sin's Poison.**

#### **7.1 Nineteen visible signs of sin and its poison.**

What happened to our first Father Adam and to our first Mother Eve for believing the Tempter and not their heavenly Father will happen to you and me, to your spouse and to your children and to anyone who turns their heart from the Lord their God. We saw what the signs of the Tempter's presence are— what are the signs of the presence of sin's poison?

Knowing what the signs of sin are and seeing their visible effects, will enable you to identify the presence of the Tempter's poison either in yourself or in others. So enlightened, you can do what has to be done, to remove the deadly toxin before it kills you or a loved one or another who may fall into his trap. These then are the visible signs by which you can identify the poison of sin either in your realm of the kingdom or in the realm of a loved one.

#### **7.2 The first visible sign of sin, nakedness.**

The Genesis narrative continues, “The man and his wife heard the sound of Yahweh God walking in the garden in the cool of the day and they hid from Yahweh God among the trees of the garden. But Yahweh God called to the man. ‘Where are you?’ he asked. ‘I heard the sound of you in the garden;’ he replied, ‘I was afraid because I was naked, so I hid.’”<sup>77</sup>

This first sin awakened our Father Adam and our Mother Eve to a new sensation... nakedness. Having done the unspeakable, our first parents saw themselves stripped of grace, naked, they lost the gift of participating in God's life. Nakedness describes our Father Adam and our Mother Eve deprived from fully participating in their heavenly Father's gift of Himself to them. The sweetness of holy simplicity and the happiness of His blessed peace were no longer theirs to enjoy. They lost their (and our) *human vision of God* of the Truth. They lost the

“Who would miss one bottle? There are so many. One bottle more or less won't make any difference.”

The question the Tempter confronted me with was, “Who would miss one bottle? There are so many.” Remember, asking you a question is a ploy the Tempter uses to get your attention. This is done to catch you off guard, since when asked a question, we are triggered to reply. In so doing, we are then in dialogue with the Serpent, something you would never do on your own initiative.

In response, I agreed. I grabbed a bottle and then ran as fast as I could. I ran, because I felt eyes were staring at me from every window on that street; I felt that everyone saw what I had done, I STOLE. I was a thief. I felt discovered and ashamed. I felt exposed. I felt naked. Where a few minutes earlier I was coming home from school without a care in the world, I was now running in fear. I was trying to hide because my heavenly Father (my conscience) was now confronting me, “What have you done?”<sup>78</sup>

As I was running away, I lost a toe rubber and returned to pick it up. A police cruiser turned the corner and immediately the officers put two and two together. They brought me into the car and returned the stolen bottle to the truck. They then drove me home and explained to my mother what had happened. What a lunch hour that was!

[One thing that did not happen, was to bring me back into God's loving arms again. The police told me this was a crime. Mother told me this was wrong. But no one helped to reconcile me with our dear Lord. Having been His innocent child one moment and a thief the next, without understanding why— I was literally in a spiritual daze. I was off balance. I lost my sense of direction. I was now living alone, in a “strange new land.” (I now realize that I did not even confess this sin, something I will rectify in this next loving encounter). We as God's children, as sweethearts (and especially as parents), have the responsibility of bringing one who has fallen, back into our dear Lord's Heart. Whatever else we do to correct any injustices that may have been done, we must also bring this wounded heart back to his or her Father's home. We cannot leave another to



#### **7.4 The second visible sign of sin, fear of God.**

Genesis continues, “The man and his wife heard the sound of Yahweh God walking in the garden in the cool of the day and they hid from Yahweh God among the trees of the garden. But Yahweh God called to the man. ‘Where are you?’ he asked. ‘I heard the sound of you in the garden;’ he replied, ‘I was afraid because I was naked, so I hid.’”<sup>80</sup>

Fear of God is the second visible sign of sin's poison. It filled our Father Adam with apprehension, distress and alarm. He knows he has done something terribly wrong. For having done this, he will be the cause of God's painful heartbreak. Our first father broke a Heart that had lovingly made only one demand against His otherwise unlimited gifts, all freely given. For having the audacity to reject all of God's gifts in favor of pursuing His one prohibition, our first father's fear is justly overwhelming. His egotistical action, so foolish and so defiant, has bitterly hurt the Person who loves him so. Persons who live in fear of God all their life, live one long continuous heartbreak. Weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends.

#### **7.5 The third visible sign of sin, hiding from God.**

“The man and his wife heard the sound of Yahweh God walking in the garden in the cool of the day and they hid from Yahweh among the trees of the garden. But Yahweh God called to the man. ‘Where are you?’ he asked. ‘I heard the sound of you in the garden;’ he replied, ‘I was afraid because I was naked, so I hid.’” The next visible sign of sin's poison, is hiding from God.

#### **7.6 How do we hide from God?**

Like our Father Adam, we hide from God by shutting Him out of our life, by not wanting to be with Him, by not wanting to see what He is doing, by trying to be where we think He is not. Persons hide from God by not looking at Him, by not listening to Him, by not wanting to talk with Him. We hide from God by not walking with Him, not

putting Him out of his or her life. Like Adam who tried to hide from God, the sinner now lives in self-inflicted solitary confinement. Days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

### **7.7 The fourth visible sign of sin, blame.**

The Genesis narrative continues, “Who told you, you were naked?” he asked. “Have you been eating of the tree I forbade you to eat?” The man replied, “It was the woman you put with me; she gave me the fruit and I ate it.” Then Yahweh God asked the woman, “What is this you have done?” The woman replied, “The serpent tempted me and I ate.”<sup>82</sup>

Blame is the next glaring visible sign of a person who is separated from Jesus our King, by the poison of sin. Blame is the sinner’s response to discovery.

Our Father Adam (because of his nakedness and fear) is actually blaming God for putting our Mother Eve with him. He then blames her as well. He's trying to protect himself at any cost. Our first father was now in a state of panic. For having disobeyed God, his heart is filled with fear. When God questions our mother, she in turn blames the serpent.

Dear Friend, whenever you hear blame, what you are hearing is a soul in souring lamentation. Blame is pride's justification for transgression. When you hear blame, you hear a soul discovered hiding from his or her heavenly Father. You must never be in hiding with such a person for you are a child of Light.

From the very beginning, light was separated from darkness. “God said, ‘Let there be light’ and there was light. God saw that light was good and God divided light from darkness.”<sup>83</sup> Sin (Darkness), is an opposite to Love (Light).

St. Paul tells us, “Light and darkness have nothing in common.”<sup>84</sup>

St. Luke suggests that the children of this world are children of darkness. He says, “For the children of this world are more astute in dealing with their own kind than are the children of light.”

ponds– each helping the other along the way. Moreover, all the heavenly treasure you can gather– together– is yours to keep.]

All the kingdoms of the world are under Satan's power.<sup>85</sup> Persons who blame others all their life are living in one continuous heart-break. Days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

### **7.8 The fifth visible sign of sin, facing time and eternity alone.**

Because of what they did, Yahweh God expelled our first parents from the Garden of Eden. “He banished the man, and in front of the Garden of Eden he posted the cherubs and the flame of a flashing sword, to guard the way to the tree of life.”<sup>86</sup>

Having said, “No!” to his heavenly Father and, “Yes!” to the Tempter, our Father Adam and our Mother Eve separated themselves from God. They were the cause of their (and our) exile from the Garden of Eden. They achieved their wish and are now on their own. Survival and security are now their (and our) problem. The future is now their (and our) personal problem. Every man for himself is the new code by which we will live. Facing time and eternity alone is the next visible sign of sin’s poison.

Persons who depend on themselves alone for everything they need, are bound to live their precious gift of life, in one long, continuous heartbreak. Days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

### **7.9 The sixth visible sign of sin, false notion of self-sufficiency.**

Because of stubborn pride, the sinner chooses not to repent before his King. He does not need God for his survival. He has a false notion of self-sufficiency. This is the next visible sign of the poison of sin in one's life.

spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

### **7.10 The seventh visible sign of sin, jealousy.**

The sinner who persists in his sin, pursues HIS goals for HIS survival, for HIS independence, for HIS security. He becomes increasingly aware however, that others are more successful than he is. With less effort than he, they live in that Peace he so earnestly seeks. They always have what they need. No matter how small they may appear, their achievements always satisfy them. They have time for other things besides work. The person who has chosen not to live with his heavenly Father, never has time for anything else except work, work and more work. Inevitably, he or she becomes jealous of these others and more and more dissatisfied with self. For this individual in this frame of mind there is never enough. While the rebelling sinner thinks he is on his own, in truth he is carrying out God's will. Ecclesiastes 2:26 tells us, "On the sinner lays the task of gathering and storing up for another who is pleasing to God." What divine mockery.

Persons who live their blessed life in constant jealousy, will suffer through one long, continuous heartbreak. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He is now more and more alone.

### **7.11 The eight visible sign of sin, rage.**

Rage, the next visible sign of sin's poison, erupts from the depths of the sinner's soul like fiery lava from an exploding volcano.

For the sinner, time is always running out. His jealousy and frustrations turn into destructive rage. His bitterness intensifies by the hour. Seeing others with more peace and security than he has, more time than he has, whose lives are so simple and uncomplicated compared to his own, who work less and get more out of life than he does, simply fuels his hate and rage. Watching others enjoying the fruits of their labor fills him with anger, for rest is not his lot.

Persons who live in constant rage will suffer through one long, continuous heartbreak. This is not how our wonderful gift of life was

more and more determined, the results continue to be less and less than what He wanted. He can't figure out what is wrong. Why are things not going as HE planned? Where is the Peace and the serenity HE yearns for, Peace He has worked and struggled so hard for? Confusion and disappointment are the next visible signs of the poison of sin. Persons who do not know which way to turn. will live their glorious gift of life in one long continuous heartbreak. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

### **7.13 The tenth visible sign of sin, deviousness.**

The years slip by very rapidly. The physical attributes of youth are now gone. He has tasted the bitterness of disappointment after disappointment. Gradually, he withdraws into himself. The gap separating him from the Kingdom of God widens and widens. He senses that everyone knows of his failings. Though he has achieved an animalistic sort of self-reliance and self-sufficiency, he does not have Peace... the real fruit of security and independence and what his soul longingly yearns for. With less and less time left, it is more and more obvious that his plan is not going to work. Now he will try to get through deception what he could not achieve openly. He turns to new allies, cunningness, treachery, deceit, fraud, bribery, hypocrisy, trickery, concealment and all other forms of deviousness. In his desperation he hopes that with their help he will finally reach his goal. The sinner plays by his rules, which is the next visible sign of the presence of sin's poison.

Persons who spend their life planning one devious act after another will suffer through one long, continuous heartbreak. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

### **7.14 The eleventh visible sign of sin, speed.**

his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

#### **7.15 The twelfth visible sign of sin, avarice.**

His security is now in money alone. He is more and more miserly. Our heavenly Father's love and the love of so many others who came his way were all rejected. It had no dollar value. It did not put money into his pocket. It was going to cost him. It was a waste of precious time.

In that absolutely wonderful movie 'A Christmas Carol', Alastair Sim portrays this disposition very vividly. Scrooge sees the consequences of this, when he sees all the hearts who were broken and who suffered because of his lust for money. Persons who spend their life in love with and dependent on their money, will suffer one long, continuous heartbreak. **Money cannot love.** Avarice is a visible sign of the poison of sin. The sinner distances himself from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He finds himself more and more alone.

#### **7.16 The thirteenth visible sign of sin, heart hardens.**

No matter what avenue he pursues, time after time, he reaches and faces the same dead end. For some this is after a few months, for others, after many years, sometimes a lifetime. Their rage heats to a continuous boil. Individuals who get into his way will suffer the consequences and it will be their own fault (blame). His single, twisted, blind sense of purpose has ruined many precious relationships and lives. He will only tolerate near him, those who are useful to him. Once their usefulness is over, he will discard them as so much excess baggage. A hardened heart now takes charge of the sinner.

Persons who use their beautiful gift of life to live with a hardened heart will suffer heartbreak after heartbreak. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself more and more from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He is more and more alone.

sinner tries, his vocabulary and his life-style will continually show him as one who placed his trust in the Tempter. He is seen and known as one who turned his heart from his heavenly Father.

Persons who serve false gods will live their gift of life in one continuous heartbreak. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself more and more from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He is more and more alone.

### **7.18 The fifteenth visible sign of sin, spirit now condemns.**

A lifetime has come and gone. Spouse and family have grown and left. Obsessed with his own goals, he has lost everything God has placed before him. In spite of his possessions he still does not have the peace and happiness he so desperately hungers for. Everything he tried has failed. He senses that all his efforts were for naught. His only act left to justify what he did is to condemn. Condemn others! Condemn creation! Condemn the church! Condemn parents. Condemn the government! Condemn! Condemn! Condemn! Each condemnation is a direct attack on the Creator, who “saw all he had made and indeed it was very good.”<sup>87</sup> For this person however everything is bad. His condemning mouth identifies him as God's enemy. Persons who are constantly condemning others will spend their life living one long, continuous heartbreak. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself more and more from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He is alone.

### **7.19 The sixteenth visible sign of sin, despair.**

Sin's poison is made visible by despair and discouragement.

Rage fuels his desperation and steams through his entire being. Others fear him and stay far away from him. A whole lifetime has come and gone. He is now more alone than ever. He has tried everything. His isolation, solitude and single sense of purpose are now closing in on him. No matter how hard the sinner tries to mask his priorities or to

pain and suffering to his heavenly Father and to so many others. His philosophy was to take, take, take and never never give to anyone. His soul knows (even if he doesn't) what fate awaits him when this is all over, when he can no longer put off facing his Creator to account for what he has done. Knowing the will is no longer in charge, the soul sees the eternal separation and fire ahead looming larger and larger. He stutters, trembles, falters, panics and is indecisive. He cannot sleep or rest. These mounting fears manifest themselves as maladies of one kind or another in the soul's host body. The poison of sin is taking its toll. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself more and more from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He is more and more alone.

#### **7.21 The eighteenth visible sign of sin, walking dead.**

Prematurely aged, his whole being is troubled. Continually exhausted, he finds speed is no longer possible. His days unfold in more and more confusion. He can no longer think clearly. Confused, he searches frantically here and there for consolation, for understanding, for the warmth of love and togetherness, for the touch of another person. His emotions have died long ago. After years of toil and seclusion, his family is a family of things and possessions. They cannot return his love for them. They cannot speak to him. They cannot console him. They cannot love him.

“...whereas their idols, in silver and gold, products of human skill, have mouths, but never speak, eyes, but never see, ears but never hear, noses, but never smell, hands, but never touch, feet, but never walk, and not a sound from their throats. Their makers will end up like them, and so will anyone who relies on them.”<sup>88</sup>

Like the rich man in Matthew 16:26, time has eroded a great gulf between him and those he used and abused. It is impossible for anyone to cross from their side to his side or for him to cross from his side to theirs. He is totally and completely alone. His will is no longer effective and his conscience has long ago sobbed a last loving admonition. The days, weeks, months and years go by. The sinner distances himself more and more from His heavenly Father, his spouse, his children, his parents and his friends. He is more and more alone.



“I'm tired of trying. It just does not work.”

“You can't trust anyone.”

“To hell with him.”

“Look after number one first, no one else will.”

“Let somebody else do it.”

“It's no use.”

“I pity the kids growing in THIS world.”

“Unless you cheat you can't succeed.”

“There's nothing anyone can do about it.”

“Am I ever tired.”

“No one gives a dam.”

“Soon I'll be six feet under and it'll all be over.”

He remembers his heavenly Father's admonition, 'you may eat indeed of all the trees in the garden. Nevertheless of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you are not to eat, for on the day you eat of it you shall most surely die.'<sup>89</sup>

This beautiful soul, marvelous wonder of our heavenly Father's delight, made in the image of His most beloved Son Jesus, has died. A lifetime has come and gone— and for what? Loved ones and friends have come and gone— all for naught. He has nothing of any value. His death was a suicide for having said, “No!” to Life, Truth and Love. His death was a suicide for having embraced the lies of Satan, the father of all lies,<sup>90</sup> for he told him when offering him the fruit of sin, “No! You will not die!... you will be like gods, knowing good and evil.”<sup>91</sup> What a tragedy.

A beautiful, unique person has wasted the blessings of Love and Life. A heart once full of Love, has withered, shriveled and died. What terrible harm has also been done to those he trapped in his blind madness (spouse, children, parents and friends).

### **7.23 The doctor is healed.**

When I give retreats on “Marriage in the Kingdom” on Friday evenings, we celebrate our week together with mass and a closing lunch. We also share with each other on how the retreat may have touched us.

In a particular parish I remember a person (a family doctor)

to me.' So the father divided the property between them. A few days later, the younger son got together everything he had and left for a distant country where he squandered his money on a life of debauchery.

When he had spent it all, that country experienced a severe famine, and now he began to feel the pinch, so he hired himself out to one of the local inhabitants who put him on his farm to feed the pigs. And he would willingly have filled his belly with the husks the pigs were eating but no one offered him anything. Then he came to his senses and said, 'How many of my father's paid servants have more food than they want, and here I am dying of hunger! I will leave this place and go to my father and say: Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you; I no longer deserve to be called your son; treat me as one of your paid servants.' So he left the place and went back to his father.

While he was still a long way off, his father saw him and was moved with pity. He ran to the boy, clasped him in his arms and kissed him tenderly. Then his son said, 'Father, I have sinned against heaven and against you. I no longer deserve to be called your son.' But the father said to his servants, 'Quick! Bring out the best robe and put it on him; put a ring on his finger and sandals on his feet. Bring the calf we have been fattening, and kill it; we are going to have a feast, a celebration, because this son of mine was dead and has come back to life; he was lost and is found.' And they began to celebrate."<sup>92</sup>

#### **7.24 The bottom line.**

If you can no longer see because of the darkness, if you are dying because of the poison of sin, stop, turn and run into your heavenly Father's arms. Repent for having turned from His Love and trust in you. Take His hand and promise Him you will never leave Him again. Failure to do so can only mean heartbreaks the likes you have never known, for you and for those you trapped in your life. You now know what the visible signs of sin are and the sign of the poison of sin. If you see any member of your family in the grip of sin, through the power of God's loving Word in you , rescue that person from the Lie that bit him or her

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 8.**

### **The World You Were Born Into.**

#### **8.1 Satan's Garden of Eden.**

Because of sin, society now suffers from blindness and violence in a world that worships money as its god.

Regardless of how it tries to portray itself, the world has its own rules for success– for having lots of money. These include lying, cheating, deceiving, stealing, terrorizing, abusing, torturing, murdering, destroying, warring and killing, to name but a few. Sickness, famine, pestilence, poverty, prostitution, loneliness, isolation, despair, discouragement, pollution and so on are its by-products. Saint Peter describes it very simply as a world “sunk in vice.”<sup>93</sup> In such a world all paths lead to suicide– spiritual, emotional, mental, and physical suicide.

In trying to protect itself from all this violence and suffering, society legislates more laws. It writes more rules. It manufactures more weapons. It hires more police. It builds more jails and more hospitals. What it has not done is to assemble before God, repent and do penance for its sins.

#### **8.2 Man's creation.**

This is the world you, your spouse and your children were born into. It is a world filled with: abortion, adultery, avarice, beatings, blame, confusion, crime, darkness, deception, drive-by shootings, drugs, fornication, fraud, greed, hate, indecency, kidnappings, lies, murder, poverty, prostitution, robbery, rape, sexual abuse, slavery, starvation, war and so on to name but a few of the curses that afflict us for leaving our God to worship false gods.

#### **8.3 BUT... THIS IS ALSO THE WORLD WHERE JESUS OF NAZARETH, GOD'S SON– WAS BORN INTO.**

#### **8.4 Your spouse's plea**

weak and feeble as I am, I have given all of what I have to you. Please do not make me your slave as well.

My dearest darling, will you fault me for my limitations when the God I have failed does not? My Beloved, will you fault me for not seeing to your needs when in my blindness I do not even see my Creator? I am so weak, confused... living in this violent land.

Beloved, I have given my all to you. I left all others to be with you. Do not abandon me. Do not let me wander in the darkness without the comfort of your hand in mine. Wait for me, my darling. Do not force a crippled soul to run. Do not press for strength from one who is so frail.

Hold my hand in yours my dearest. Let my head rest next to yours. Let us taste the security of our togetherness. Ah, how strong we are hand in hand, my dearest.”

~

**8.5 The bottom line.** Our dear Lord and King, asks you and me to be brave, because He *has* conquered the world.<sup>94</sup> Stay at His side and have no fear.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 9.**

### **A Light Comes into Our Darkness.**

#### **9.1 Jesus' divinity.**

Dearest Friend, it was in this dark, terror filled, confused, painful and lamenting world, when on that eventful day two thousand years ago Jesus was baptized. It was then when, "The heavens opened and John saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and coming down on him. A voice spoke from heaven: 'This is my Son, the Beloved; my favour rests on him.'"<sup>95</sup> The bible is full of references to Jesus' divinity. Here are but a few:

"Then Moses said to God, 'I am to go, then, to the sons of Israel and say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you. But if they ask me what his name is, what am I to tell them?' And God said to Moses, 'I Am who I Am. This' he added 'is what you must say to the sons of Israel: I Am has sent me to you.'"<sup>96</sup> Jesus confirms that He is, "I Am" when in John 8:58 He says, "I tell you most solemnly, before Abraham ever was, I Am."

They asked... "Whatever kind of man is this? Even the winds and the sea obey him?"<sup>97</sup>

Jesus tells us, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me."<sup>98</sup>

Unclean spirits asked of him, "What do you want with me Jesus son of the Most High God?"<sup>99</sup>

Jesus replies, "No one has gone up to heaven except the one who has come down from heaven, the Son of Man who is in heaven."<sup>100</sup>

Jesus is called the "Holy One."<sup>101</sup>

"There is one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things come and through whom we exist."<sup>102</sup>

"Every tongue should acclaim Jesus Christ as Lord, to the glory of God the Father."<sup>103</sup>

#### **9.2 Jesus' teachings**

in the markets in your community, in the slums of your city, in your work place or in the institutions of your country?

In a world where there is much indifference to the needs of others, in a world that preaches might is right, in a world where so many hearts are abused, Jesus tells us, “How happy the poor in spirit; theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Happy the gentle: they shall have the earth for their heritage. Happy those who mourn, they shall be comforted. Happy those who hunger and thirst for what is right, they shall be satisfied. Happy the merciful: they shall have mercy shown to them. Happy the pure in heart: they shall see God. Happy those who are persecuted in the cause of right: theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Happy are you when people abuse you and persecute you and speak all kinds of calumny against you on my account. Rejoice and be glad, for your reward will be great in heaven; this is how they persecuted the prophets before you.”<sup>104</sup>

†

In a world where success is measured by what you have, our King tells us, “Do not store up treasures for yourself on earth, where moths and woodworms destroy them and thieves can break in and steal. But store up treasures for yourself in heaven, where neither moths nor woodworms destroy them and thieves cannot break in and steal.”<sup>105</sup>

†

In a world that preaches, “Get what you can while the getting's good,” in a world where we are told that the only way you can survive is to have two jobs and everything else has to come second, our King tells us, “That is why I am telling you not to worry about your life and what you are to eat, nor about your body and how you are to clothe it. Surely life means more than food, and the body more than clothing! Look at the birds in the sky. They do not sow or reap or gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth much more than they are? Can any of you, for all his worrying, add one single cubit to his span of life? And why worry about clothing? Think of the flowers growing in the fields; they never have to work or spin; yet I assure you that not even Solomon in all his regalia was robed like one of these. Now if that is how God clothes the grass in the field which is

†

In a world where there is hatred, rape, violence, murder and wars, our King tells us, “Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you; in this way you will be sons of your Father in heaven, for he causes his sun to rise on bad men as well as good, and his rain to fall on honest and dishonest men alike.”<sup>107</sup> “Do not be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot kill the soul; fear him rather who can destroy both body and soul in hell.”<sup>108</sup>

†

In a world filled with laws, rules and thousands of regulations, our King gives us two simple commandments, “You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the greatest and the first commandment. The second resembles it, You must love your neighbour as yourself.”<sup>109</sup> “So always treat others as you would like them to treat you; that is the meaning of the Law and the Prophets.”<sup>110</sup>

†

In a world where money has been made the golden calf to be worshiped, our King tells us, “Man does not live by bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God,”<sup>111</sup> and, “You cannot be the slave both of God and of money,”<sup>112</sup> and, “... if two of you on earth agree to ask for anything at all, it will be granted to you by my Father in heaven.”<sup>113</sup>

†

In a world where we are bombarded from all sides on how to be successful, Jesus tells us, “... unless you change and become like little children, you will never enter the kingdom of heaven.”<sup>114</sup>

†

In a world where there is much deception, confusion, lies and mistrust, our King tells us, “I am the Way, the Truth and the Life.”<sup>115</sup>

### **9.3 Jesus' miracles.**

Jesus revealed His love for the world not only by His teachings but also by healing and restoring life to mankind.

He:

*forgave the contrite sinner* <sup>116</sup>

cured a leper.<sup>118</sup>  
 cured the centurion's servant.<sup>119</sup>  
 cured Peter's mother-in-law from a fever.<sup>120</sup>  
 cast out many devils.<sup>121</sup>  
 cured all who were sick.<sup>122</sup>  
 calmed the storm.<sup>123</sup>  
 cast the demoniacs into the lake.<sup>124</sup>  
 cured a paralytic.<sup>125</sup>  
 raised the ruler's daughter from the dead.<sup>126</sup>  
 cured a woman with a haemorrhage.<sup>127</sup>  
 gave sight to two blind men.<sup>128</sup>  
 cured a dumb demoniac.<sup>129</sup>  
 healed a man's withered hand.<sup>130</sup>  
 fed over 5,000 with five loaves and two fish.<sup>131</sup>  
 cured all those who touched his cloak.<sup>132</sup>  
 cured a woman tormented by a devil.<sup>133</sup>  
 fed over 4,000 with five loaves and two fish.<sup>134</sup>  
 cured an epileptic demoniac.<sup>135</sup>  
 restored sight to two blind men.<sup>136</sup>  
 cast out an unclean spirit.<sup>137</sup>  
 healed a deaf mute.<sup>138</sup>  
 healed a blind paralytic at Bethsaida.<sup>139</sup>  
 caught a draught of fish.<sup>140</sup>  
 raised a widow's son at Nain.<sup>141</sup>  
 healed the infirm bent woman.<sup>142</sup>

---

118 Matthew 8:2.

119 Matthew 8:5.

120 Matthew 8:14.

121 Matthew 8:16.

122 Matthew 8:16.

123 Matthew 8:23.

124 Matthew 8:28.

125 Matthew 9:2.

126 Matthew 9:18.

127 Matthew 9:20.

128 Matthew 9:27.



healed the man with dropsy.<sup>143</sup>

cleansed the ten lepers.<sup>144</sup>

restored a servant's ear.<sup>145</sup>

healed the nobleman's son of fever.<sup>146</sup>

healed an infirm man at Bethesda.<sup>147</sup>

healed the man born blind.<sup>148</sup>

raised Lazarus from the dead.<sup>149</sup>

caught a second draught of fish.<sup>150</sup>

rose from the dead.<sup>151</sup>

This, dearest Friend, is the Jesus who came to this dark, terror-filled, confused, painful and lamenting world on that eventful day two thousand years ago, to teach us how to live... so that you and I may have life, real life, and have it in abundance.<sup>152</sup>

#### **9.4 The bottom line.**

Jesus is the only person who has the words of life, who can give us peace and can satisfy our every need. To put your faith in anyone else or into any other thing is to suffer heartbreak after heartbreak after heartbreak.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 10.**

### **Your Baptism, a Holy Thursday Just for You.**

#### **10.1 Immunized from the poison of sin.**

Dearest Child of God, by taking upon Himself our sufferings, the sufferings and death of every man, woman and child whoever was, who is and whoever will be, Jesus immunized you and me from the fatal poison of sin.

How did your King's love reach out to you personally? How were you personally identified as the person He came to suffer and die for in your stead? On Holy Thursday Jesus, "Took some bread and when he had given thanks, broke it and gave it to them, saying, 'This is my body which will be given up for you; do this as a memorial of me'. He did the same with the cup saying, 'This cup is the new covenant in my blood which will be poured out for you.'"<sup>153</sup> The word, "You" in His loving sacrificial offering, includes you and me and every man, woman and child who was, who is and who will be.

On the day of your baptism, your parents held your tiny, helpless body with love and tenderness. Because they are members of the Body of Christ, through them, it was our dear Lord who held you in His arms.

As the life-giving water (visible sign of His redemptive love) trickled onto your head, His Holy Thursday of 2,000 years ago reached out through time and space and became a personal, historical event between Jesus and You. His, "You."<sup>154</sup> of Holy Thursday is now revealed as your beautiful name, for with God, "a thousand years are a single day, a yesterday now over, an hour of the night."<sup>155</sup>

As that first drop of life-giving water kissed your little head, through your parents and His minister, Jesus brought you into His resurrected heart. All the pain, suffering and death which was your lot as a descendant of Father Adam and Mother Eve, were then confirmed as having been taken by Jesus onto Himself, 'This is my body which will be given up for you'<sup>156</sup> Christ's death was your death. His resurrection

in Christ Jesus. He resurrected you from the deep, dark black grave of death into His bright life-giving Body. “The Son of Man came to give his life as a ransom for many.” <sup>157</sup>

### **10.2 How Jesus immunized us from the poison of sin.**

How did Jesus save you and me from the poison and death of sin? Imagine a lamb grazing peacefully in a pasture. A deadly venomous serpent approaches. The lamb sees it but does nothing. When the serpent is close enough, it springs upon the animal and inserts its needle-sharp fangs into it. It then wraps itself around its victim for a firm hold; then with a tenacious bite it lets the deadly toxin flow. Filled with terror and pain, the lamb shudders and trembles as its nervous system goes into paralysis. Breathing becomes difficult. It loses its ability to contract and expand its lungs. In its final convulsions it falls to the ground, dead. Lazily, the serpent unwraps itself from the lifeless body and leaves.

A few minutes later a second serpent approaches. More poisonous than the first, it too injects the lamb with its deadly venom. Will this second injection have any effect on the lamb? Of course not. Why? Because the lamb is already dead and poison has no effect on what is already dead.

This is what Jesus did for you, for your spouse, for your children and for me: He bore the pains of the fruit of sin: separation from God, shame of nakedness, fear, isolation, loneliness, despair, anger, confusion, discouragement, terror, humiliation, murder, war, rape, famine, poverty, prostitution, deceit, killing, terrorism, adultery, abuse, torture, destruction, anxiety, abandonment and every heartbreaking pain associated with these terrible consequences of sin. He bore the spiritual, emotional, mental, physical sufferings and death that the poison of sin brought into our lives.

Jesus willingly took upon himself the spiritual, emotional, mental and physical sufferings and death of all the sins of every person whoever was, who is and whoever will be, from the very first to the very last. All these he suffered in the space of a few hours, unto the death of the cross.

He delivered himself “I like a sheep that is led to the slaughter-

As He carried His heavy cross over the stone streets of Jerusalem, they mocked Him, spat on Him, stoned and ridiculed Him. Their dogs bit at His heels. Jesus suffered these abuses and degradations in reconciliation for our blasphemies against God.

With outstretched arms on the cross, He suffered a horrible, painful, shameful death, a death that was so rightly ours. He embraced the consequences and sufferings of every sin, from Adam's to mine and yours, to the last person who will live on this earth.

Like the lamb that died because of the poisonous venom of the serpent, and can no longer die again no matter how many other serpents inject their venom into it, we too (in Christ Jesus) are dead to the poison of sin. Jesus took upon himself ALL the sufferings that belonged to us as well as our death. Now we (without having to suffer the pain of the wages of sin) are now (in Christ Jesus) dead to the poison of sin. Because we are dead to the poison of sin, the venom of sin no longer has any terminal effect on us.

“Death, where is your sting?”<sup>159</sup>

“When he died, he died, once for all, to sin, so his life now is life with God; and in that way, you too must consider yourselves to be dead to sin but alive for God in Christ Jesus.”<sup>160</sup>

“The reason, therefore, why those who are in Christ Jesus are not condemned, is that the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set you free from the law of sin and death. God has done what the Law, because of our unspiritual nature, was unable to do. God dealt with sin by sending his own Son in a body as physical as any sinful body and in that body God condemned sin.”<sup>161</sup>

### **10.3 A comparison of the Redemptive Act.**

Here is another way to visualize the impact of Jesus' love for you and me.

Imagine that your great-great-grandfather made a very bad business deal. Mortgaging his lands and holdings at such a high rate of interest, neither he nor the generations that followed were ever able to pay off any of the capital. As the unpaid interest accumulated and accumulated, the debt grew and grew. Now, you are the owner of these properties. You will spend the rest of your life working day and night

You are in disbelief! One minute you and your family are hopelessly in debt. All of you had life sentences to work day and night just to stay alive. Now you are free from all debt. You do not owe a penny to anyone! This total stranger paid your backbreaking mortgage. Instead of life going on day after day and year after year in despair, anguish and hopelessness, your future is now full of new and exciting possibilities. Each of you taste anew the sweetness of a life that all had given up of ever knowing again. Now you and your loved ones need not worry anymore. All can now enjoy the wonderful gift of life, full of freedom, together, without a care to dampen your spirits. An unbearable load has been taken off your shoulders.

Because this stranger loved you and your family enough to pay this mortgage with his own funds, the future is now completely in each person's own two hands. How do you thank such a benefactor?

Alas, our dear Lord did much more than this. There was no simple mortgage for him to pay. Our redemption required an act of love in direct proportion to the debt we brought on to ourselves.

#### **10.4 Your baptism is your first resurrection.**

Friend, do you realize what has happened to you because of your baptism? Do you truly realize that because of your baptism you are now living your first resurrection, the resurrection of your soul in the Body of Christ?

Because of your baptism, He has resurrected you from the dead and you are now living a new life, a life in the Spirit in Christ Jesus. Jesus has given you a new life, a life filled with new hope, new audacity and new power to do Godly things. "Ah, what is man that you should spare a thought for him, the son of man that you should care for him? Yet you have made him little less than a god."<sup>162</sup>

Our dear Lord, having taken upon Himself the death that was yours, has resurrected, to die no more. If you live this first resurrection of your soul, this new life you have in Jesus (which is where you are NOW), you will die no more. At the second resurrection, which is the resurrection of your body at the end of time, your body will rise free from decay and death to be united in joyous reunion with your resurrected soul forever in God's glory

rything you do must be in this reality. Here is what Saint Augustine says about the two resurrections.

**10.5 St. Augustine and the two resurrections.**<sup>163</sup>

“6. The first resurrection and the second.

Jesus then goes on to say, 'Mark my words carefully: I am telling you that a time is coming, in fact it has already come, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear shall live. For the Father has life in himself, so has the Son, by the Father's gift.'

He is not yet speaking of the second resurrection, that is, the resurrection of the body, which is to come at the end of the world, but about the first, which is here and now. It is, in fact, to distinguish the two that he says, 'The time is coming, in fact it is already come.'

This resurrection, however, is not the resurrection of the body, but of the soul. For souls also have their own death, in the shape of irreligion and sin, the death died by those referred to by the Lord when He says, 'Let the dead bury their own dead', that is, 'Let those who are dead in soul bury those who are dead in body.' Thus he is speaking of those who are dead in soul, because of irreligion and wickedness, when He says, 'The time is coming, in fact it has already come, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear shall live.' By 'those who hear' he means 'those who obey and believe and who persevere to the end.' And He does not here make any distinction between the good and the evil. For it is good for all to hear his voice and to come to life by passing over from the death of irreligion to the life of devotion.

It is of this death that the apostle Paul is speaking when he says, 'Therefore all mankind has died; and he died for all, so that men, when they are alive, should not live for themselves henceforth, but should live for him who for their sake died and rose again.' So all men are dead in sin, without any exception at all, whether that sin is original sin or voluntary sin in addition to that-committed either in ignorance of what is right, or by failing to do what is known to be right. And for all these dead, there died the one man truly alive, that is, the

The one is the resurrection of mercy, the other the resurrection of judgment. That is the meaning of the verse in the psalm, 'I will sing to you, Lord, of mercy and of judgment.' Jesus goes on to speak of this judgment, in saying, 'And he has given him authority to pass judgment, because he is the Son of Man'. Here he is showing that he will come to judge in the body in which he came to be judged; that is the point of saying 'because he is the Son of Man'.

Then he adds the words relevant to our present topic. 'Do not be surprised at this, that the time is coming when all who are in the grave will hear his voice and will come out; those who have done right will rise to life, those who have done wrong will rise for judgment.' This is judgment in the sense in which he used the word a little before, meaning 'condemnation', when he said, 'He who listens to my words and puts his faith in him who sent me, has everlasting life and will not come up for judgment, but has passed over from death to life.' This means that by taking part in the first resurrection which effects the passage from death to life, he will not come up for condemnation, which is what he means by the term 'judgment, as he does also in this other place, where he says, 'Those who have done wrong will rise for judgment.'

And so anyone who does not wish to be condemned in the second resurrection must rise up in the first. For the time is coming, in fact it has already come, when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear will live, that is they will not come into condemnation, the 'second death,' as it is called. Into this death, after the second resurrection, the resurrection of bodies which is to come, they will be hurled who do not rise up in the first resurrection, the resurrection of souls.

For the time is coming (and here he does not say 'and in fact it has come already' because it is to be at the end of the world. that is, at the last and greatest judgment of God) when all who are in the grave will hear his voice and will come out.' He does not say, as in the first resurrection, 'and those who hear it will live'. For not all will live, that is, not all will have that life which, because it is a life of bliss, is the only life truly worthy of the name. For obviously they could not, without life of some sort hear and come forth from the grave in the resurrection

above: one according to faith, which comes here and now through baptism, and the other in the body, a rebirth which will come in its freedom from decay and death, as a result of the great and last judgment. Similarly, there are two resurrections: the first, the resurrection of the soul, which is here and now and prevents us from coming to the second death; and the second, which is not now, but is to come at the end of the world. This is not the resurrection of the soul but of the body and by means of the last judgment it will consign many to the second death and bring others to the life that knows no death.”

#### **10.6 Saint Paul and living our first resurrection.**

In Romans 13:11-14, our brother Paul tells us, “Besides, you know the time has come: you must wake up now: our salvation is even nearer than it was when we were converted. The night is almost over, it will be daylight soon - let us give up all the things we prefer to do under the cover of the dark; let us arm ourselves and appear in the light. Let us live decently as people do in the daytime: no drunken orgies, no promiscuity or licentiousness and no wrangling or jealousy. Let your armour be the Lord Jesus Christ; forget about satisfying your bodies with all their cravings.”

And, again he says, “Brothers, this is what I mean: our time is growing short. Those who have wives should live as though they have none and those who mourn should live as though they had nothing to mourn for; those enjoying life should live as though there were nothing to laugh about; those whose life is buying things should live as though they had nothing of their own; and those, who have to deal with the world should not become engrossed in it. I say this because the world as we know it is passing away.”<sup>164</sup>

#### **10.7 Saint John and living our first resurrection.**

Our brother John wrote, “This is the revelation given by God to Jesus Christ so that he could tell his servants about the things which are now to take place very soon; he sent his angel to make it known to his servant John and John has written down everything he saw and swears it is the word of God guaranteed by Jesus Christ. Happy the man who reads this prophecy and happy those who listen to him if



on the throne spoke: 'Now I am making the whole of creation new!'"<sup>167</sup>  
Your baptism in Christ Jesus has made you a new creation.

### **10.9 Your new title and your crown.**

"He raises the poor from the dust, he lifts the needy from the dunghill to give them a place with princes, and to assign them a seat of honour."<sup>168</sup> Dearest Child of God, because of the resurrection of your soul through baptism, you are now a part of the new Jerusalem in Jesus, "You are to be a crown of splendour in the hands of Yahweh, a princely diadem in the hand of your God."<sup>169</sup> Because of your royal stature, you will be known as the Monarch, you will now be addressed as your Highness.

### **10.10 God looks at you in wonder and in awe.**

A mother looks at her newborn in deep contemplation. In silence, the babe too searches her countenance and strives to see her features, she who has given him his very existence. This, the moment of their first meeting, is beyond words and belongs to the eyes alone.

Your Highness, because you are now a new creation in Christ Jesus, God also looks at you in marvel, in awe and in wonder for you are made in His image, "God created man in the image of himself, in the image of God he created him, male and female he created them."<sup>170</sup>

### **10.11 Made in God's image, but whom do you look like?**

As you strive to see God's face, to find His countenance and to look into His eyes, whom do you see? Saint John tells us, "No one has ever seen God; it is only the Son, who is nearest to the Father's heart who has made him known."<sup>171</sup> So, you are made in God's image, but you have not seen God.

"Whom do you look like then?"

"Where do you come from?"

"Where are you going?"

Jesus is who you look like, for Jesus is who God looks like. He says, "To have seen me is to have seen the Father,"<sup>172</sup> and again He says, "If you know me, you know the Father too."<sup>173</sup>

*Jesus is the image of our Father*

Jesus sees what our Father sees.

Jesus has the power our Father has.

Jesus goes where our Father goes.

Your Highness, you, your spouse and your children have been made in the image of Jesus Christ, Son of God. So newborn in Christ Jesus, rub your eyes and look at His divine face. See whom you look like. See where you came from. Search His countenance; see how beautiful, wonderful and blessed you are. Look at Jesus' Heart and you will see everything you need to see and know everything you need to know about your God in whose image you are made.

### **10.12 Jesus is a natural Presence in our lives.**

One evening I was on the sun deck praying the Liturgy of the Hours, when I asked our dear Mother Mary, "Mother, why is it I have to follow Jesus? Why can't I be with the Father without following Jesus?"

In a selfish sort of mood, I did not think that it was fair for our heavenly Father to have me follow another Person. Why couldn't we be just the two of us, Father and son? I felt I was a second class child. I knew this was not a question to be proud of, but it was in me and I wanted to deal with it. Where else to go for help but to your mother?

Her response was to ask me if I begrudged our heavenly Father for having made the sun?

"No of course not," I replied. Without the sun my eyes would be useless. I would not be able to see everything there is to see in this incredibly beautiful creation. I need the light of the sun if my eyes are to see."

"And so it is with Jesus," she said. "Jesus is the Light your eyes need to see God. You are not a 'second class child.'"

I detected a mild reprimand. What a wonderful spiritual Mother our dear Lord has given to us.

### **10.13 Jesus, our Light to see God by.**

Look to Jesus, your Highness, and you will see everything you need to see and know everything you need to know about God in whose image you are made. Learn from Jesus. Walk with Him, Listen to Him. Talk with Him. Do the things He does. There is no one else anywhere

dom of God, He gave you power over everything within your realm. This power is yours and yours alone. No one can take this power from you unless you give it to them. This power is your will, a very precious treasure indeed.

Since all you really own is your will, since it is yours and yours alone, it is the only thing you will be held fully accountable for when you return to your Father's home, "So I tell you this, that for every unfounded word men utter they will answer on judgment day, since it is by your words you will be acquitted and by your words condemned."<sup>175</sup>

In our journey together, a sword with two razor-sharp edges will symbolize your will. One edge symbolizes your power to say, "Yes." and the other edge symbolizes your power to say, "No." These are two little words, yes and no. They are little indeed but their power is awesome. You know from your own experience, better than anything I can share with you, how effective and final these little words are.

You must be very skilled in using your sword (your will). You should know how to use it quickly, effectively, and with finality. The blows you strike with it must be lethal for you may not get a second chance. It must be kept at your side always. You must be skilled enough and strong enough to slay the largest dragon and be nimble and quick enough to kill the smallest serpent.

Your Highness, as we continue our journey together, we will learn when to say, "Yes!" to what is good and holy and for our heavenly Father's greater glory and when to say, "No!" to everything else.

You should always make decisions using your will and never act in response to your emotions or physical appetites alone. Emotions and physical appetites are good when used to fuel and to give thrust to your will once you have chosen your plan of action. Emotions and physical appetites, however, cannot by themselves make good decisions. Appetites and emotions are ignorant in the ways of discernment. A sailing ship needs all the wind its sails can hold. Your will also needs emotions and appetites to fill your determination and to steadfastly hold on to your course. A ship blown about by the winds with no one at the rudder can only have a violent end. If you allow your emotions and physical appetites to replace your will, you will no longer reign as a Monarch in the Kingdom of God. You cannot reign in the Kingdom of

sion to love is an act of the will. Have you so decreed for the happiness of your loved one?

### **10.15 Your heart.**

In Scripture, the word 'heart' is the seat of life or inner strength. If the heart symbolizes the seat of life, then it symbolizes as well all those preoccupations and concerns relevant to the giving of life, to the sustaining of life. It is also, by its very nature, acutely alert and sensitive to all those things that can diminish or threaten life. In this exercise, the heart will symbolize Life and the concerns of Life. In our journey, the heart will represent Jesus, Heart of hearts, who is Life Itself and in whose image you are made.

### **10.16 Your mind.**

Your mind is another wonderful treasure given to you, your Highness. The role of reason, imagination, memory, intelligence and all your cerebral faculties is to receive the dreams and visions of the Heart, to faithfully show the will its choices, to determine what resources you need and what would be the best way to cause their transformation and to accept its decision.

Your mind is well equipped for this purpose. It is instructed by learning, stimulated by your imagination, guided by your memory, enhanced by your natural abilities, talents, inherited and developed gifts and skills. Taught by Jesus, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, no problem is too difficult for the mind to resolve. No goal is impossible to reach. Guided by your will, the mind can carry out extremely well the tasks assigned to it.

The mind (unlike the heart) has no ability or capacity to dream dreams and see visions in the Kingdom of God. Consequently, the mind does not have the authority to alter in any way the dreams and visions of the Monarch. These dreams and visions are inspired by his Royal Confidante Jesus and affect the welfare of the inhabitants of the Kingdom of God. Should the mind try to do so (really an attempt by logic to overrule Love) tragedy and disaster will overcome the Kingdom. We will see how, when we visit the Kingdom of Man and the Kingdom of Satan

to best make these visions and dreams come true. Once your will has made a choice, the plans are drawn and given to your body for implementation.

Supported by the royal troops (good health, physical strengths and skills) your body then begins the process of transforming creation for God's greater glory. Like a good soldier, the body carries out its responsibilities without question, for the Monarch will not ask it to do what it cannot do.

No matter how worthy the dreams of the Monarch or how well the mind has drawn the plans, if the Body cannot respond effectively, transformation of the Kingdom cannot materialize. The state of one's health is of constant concern to the Monarch. Nutritional food, proper exercise, medical checkups, good living habits etc. are all part of the royal program for maintaining the "armed forces" in top condition.

In the Kingdom of God, the Body knows that should the enemy capture it (malnutrition, exhaustion, disease, illness or accident etc.) the Monarch's abilities diminish considerably. If his forces are unable to act, the Monarch is then helpless to effect good government in the Kingdom of God. The true worth of the body, what it does best, is to help the Monarch make his dreams and visions come true. In the Kingdom of God therefore, the state of one's health is of prime concern to the Monarch.

Your Highness, you are the first and the greatest treasure in the Kingdom of God. Genesis 1:31. tells us, "God saw all that he had made, and indeed it was very good." I invite you to write this text and place it on the mirror you first look into in the morning and the one you last look into at night. When you see yourself on the morning of a brand new day, read it and remember how very special you are. Remember that God made you in His image and that He saw how very good you are. Then live that day as a child of God, full of excitement and pride in a Father who loves you so. When you see yourself at bedtime, read it and remember how very special you are. Remember that God made you in His image and that He saw how very good you are. Then, as a child of God, rest in that blessed night, full of peace and pride in a Father who loves you so.

you never thought possible. Christ's Light in You, will eradicate the Darkness. Hearts that have turned to stone will again beat with love and compassion. Thousands will be rescued from slavery because of who you are and the authority that you have in your King's name.

Before you do one more thing, wash away the soil and dust of the foreign lands you now live in; put on your baptismal robe, your royal crown, take your mighty sword; gather your troops, then, with the Light of Christ to guide you, restore creation for the greater glory of our heavenly Father, wherever you may be in His Kingdom.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 11.

### Jesus, Your King, Your Royal Confidante.

#### 11.1 In charge of God's creation.

Your Highness, you are one of many persons who have been put in charge of God's creation. "God blessed them saying to them: 'Be fruitful, multiply, fill the earth and conquer it. Be masters of the fish of the sea, the birds of heaven and all living animals on the earth.'" <sup>177</sup>

But... Be fruitful, your Highness? Multiply? Fill the earth? Conquer it? Be masters of the fish... the birds... all living animals on the earth? Eat of all the trees except the tree of knowledge of good and evil? How do we do these things? Who is going to show us how? "For this Law that I enjoin on you today is not beyond your strength or beyond your reach. It is not in heaven, so that you need to wonder, 'Who will go up to heaven for us and bring it down to us, so that we may hear it and keep it?' Nor is it beyond the seas, so that you need to wonder, 'Who will cross the seas for us and bring it back to us, so that we may hear it and keep it?' No, the Word is very near to you, it is in your mouth and in your Heart for your observance."<sup>178</sup>

The "Word" is within you; "It is in your mouth and in your heart." Remember this text from John's gospel?

"In the beginning was the Word:  
the Word was with God  
and the Word was God.  
He was with God in the beginning.  
Through him all things came to be,  
not one thing had its being but through him.  
All that came to be had life in him  
and that life was the light of men,  
a light that shines in the dark,  
a light that darkness could not overpower."<sup>179</sup>

The "Word" is Jesus, who gives everything to you gratuitously, to govern with Him to make "all things anew" "Now I am making the

“To write down everything I know about my spouse” they said, “would take volumes and volumes.”

A single hair contains enough genetic information about you to fill 1,000 volumes. The brain is made up of 100 billion nerve cells called neurons, and can hold more information than all the books that have ever been published. Writing everything there is to know about another person would take books and books and books, unless... unless we simply wrote that person's name.

A person's name contains the person and everything there is to know about that person— his or her past, present and future. No record can contain more information about a person, than his or her name.

[Ask any mother what she sees when she hears the name of her child. She will tell you volumes, for she knows her child through and through. When she hears his or her name, he or she is present to her.]

But... if a name is to be meaningful to another, it will depend on how well the Other knows that person. A person can only be present to you to the extent you know that person. If a person is physically present and you do not know that person, you would only see the physical presence and know the person only from what you see. You really would not know him (or her). When you truly know a person, you are present to that person, whenever his or her name is thought of by you or spoken by you or another, whether that person is physically present or not.

### **11.3 Jesus is within you.**

Dwelling within you and me, is the Word,<sup>181</sup> is Jesus, “through whom all things came to be.”<sup>182</sup> But, to live with Jesus we must know Him. To know Him, we must (as in all personal relationships) meet Him. To meet Him, we must respond to the visible signs of His presence— first in our heart for we are made in His image and because the Word is within us. Then through His creation, His gospels, His church, His sacraments, His saints, our experiences, His presence in Others.

*We in turn must receive His gifts, thank Him, use them lovingly.*



will do it.”<sup>184</sup> Do you understand this? “If you ask for anything in my name, I will do it.” The King of kings anxiously awaits your request, your Highness. “Until now you have not asked anything in my name. Ask and you will receive, and so your joy will be complete.”<sup>185</sup>

Your Highness, Jesus, your Royal Confidante, will never abandon you, “Does a woman forget her baby at the breast, or fail to cherish the son of her womb? Yet even if these forget, I will never forget you.”<sup>186</sup>

#### **11.4 What has Jesus done for you?**

Jesus made you in His image, Jesus dwells within you, and because of His love for you, Jesus has made you a new creation in Him.

#### **11.5 The bottom line.**

If Jesus was not, you and I would not be. Our spouses would not be. Our children would not be. We were brought into existence, (like and with the angels) for His sake, to minister to Him.

[“In the sixth instant was decreed the creation of a people and congregation of men for Christ, who was already formed in the divine mind and will, and according whose image and likeness man was to be made, in order, that the incarnate Word might find brethren, similar but inferior to Himself and a people of his own nature, of whom He might be the Head. In this instant was determined the order of the creation of the whole human race, which was to begin from one man and woman and propagate itself, until the Virgin and her Son should be born in the predestined order. On account of the merits of Christ, our Saviour, the graces and gifts were prearranged, and also original justice, if they would only preserve it. The fall of Adam was foreseen and in that of all others, except of the Queen, who did not enter into this decree. As a remedy, it was ordained that the most holy humanity should be capable of suffering. The predestined were chosen by free grace, and the foreknown were reprobated with exact justice. All that was convenient and necessary for the conservation of the human race and for obtaining

not knowing and loving Him as the highest Good of all creation.” (The Mystical City of God by Blessed Mary of Agreda, Part First, “The Conception,” Book One, Chapter II, page 35.)]

Dearest Friend, the next time you see anyone, (you, your spouse, your children, others) remember, that person is there because of Christ. Yet, He has not made us His slaves, on the contrary He has elected to share with us His Kingship, His Priesthood and His Prophetic Voice. He has sent to each of us the Holy Spirit to enable us to do all this. “Ah, what is man that you should spare a thought for him? the son of man that you should care for him? You have made him a little less than a god, you have crowned him with glory and splendour.”<sup>187</sup> Through God’s bounty we were given life and made “worthy” to minister to His Son. He has even made His Mother our Mother.

Dearest Sister or Brother, live the life of the person you really are, the person God made. Be faithful to your King. Minister to Him with all that Heaven is giving you. The Holy Spirit is with you to teach you how. Above all, do not deny or prevent another (especially Hearts confided to your care) from loving and serving Jesus their King

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 12.**

### **Your Heavenly Father.**

#### **12.1 Abba.**

“Everyone moved by the Spirit is a son of God. The spirit you received is not the spirit of slaves bringing fear into your lives again; it is the spirit of sons and it makes us cry out, ‘Abba, Father!’”<sup>188</sup>

Your Highness, because you are a new creation in Christ Jesus, it is fitting for you to live with your heavenly Father and to love Him as His child. You will love Him as He loves you, with all your heart, with all your soul and with all your mind.<sup>189</sup>

#### **12.2 Loving money more than loving our heavenly Father.**

Once I was a faithful purchaser of lottery tickets. Every week, with much excitement, Florence and I anxiously awaited for news of the winning numbers, and every week we would be disappointed. Yet, I expended no energy in thanking my heavenly Father for His love that He personally and intimately shares with me hour after hour, day after day after day. I expressed no words of thanksgiving or of appreciation or of gratitude for my life, for creation, for my loved one, for my children, for my work with its many challenges, for my friends, for our nest and so on.

He was giving me His Love personally and without condition, day after day after day, sustaining me and helping me to grow and to blossom. During this time, all I was doing was taking everything with both hands, without saying even once, “Thank You Father.”

Then one day (shortly after my conversion) I realized how much hope and anticipation, how many of my dreams, ambitions and expectations depended on winning that weekly draw. I was spending large amounts of emotional energy on the luck of the draw and on the chance that I would win lots of money, because then... I would be happy.

*When I realized what I was doing I was ashamed and very*

“What a wonderful Father we have.”

How many times have I repeatedly disappointed Him because of my selfishness and ungratefulness? If I cannot receive His blessings in thanksgiving where the essentials of my life are concerned (and use them for his greater glory) how can I possibly expect Him to bless me with abundance? Most unreasonable.

Our King tells us, “... use money, tainted as it is, to win you friends and thus make sure that when it fails you, they will welcome you into the tents of eternity. The man who can be trusted in little things can be trusted in great; the man who is dishonest in little things will be dishonest in great. If then you cannot be trusted with money, that tainted thing, who will trust you with genuine riches? And if you cannot be trusted with what is not yours, who will give you what is your very own?”<sup>190</sup>

That was when I stopped putting my heart into the hope of the next draw. I stopped wasting and gambling away the precious gift of love, thanksgiving and money that could have been used for my family or in helping others.

As an aside, one day when I was giving the homily in a local parish, I shared this experience with the congregation, adding: “why should I be satisfied with a few million (lottery prizes) when my Father owns the bank?” After the homily, I returned to the celebrant's side for the continuation of the mass. Not catching the drift of the story, using the microphone he asked, “What branch does your dad own, Ray?”

Completely taken by his unexpected question, I replied, “No branch Father, head office.”

### **12.3 Our Father’s countless gifts.**

I then began embracing my heavenly Father for His countless loving gifts, gifts He gives me day after day after day. I embrace Him for His gift of opening my eyes in the morning, to see a new day. I embrace Him for His gift of seeing the eyes of that loving heart next to me. I embrace Him for His gift of morning prayers. I embrace Him for His gift of a glass of orange juice. I embrace Him for His gift of hearing the birds sing. I embrace Him for His warm sun and for the countless ways He is with me through His gifts and surprises. I try to appreciate and

life; my home, the house of Yahweh, as long as I live.”<sup>191</sup>

In gratitude I try to live in response to His love for me. I try to use His things with care and appreciation, to share with others and enjoy the peace a child has who lives with a loving Parent. I never know what exciting surprises He has in store for me, for surprising us is what He delights in doing the most.

#### **12.4 We must be as generous as He is.**

Your heavenly Father has so much to give. As His son or daughter you must learn to be as generous as He is, for the happiness of a Father is in seeing His child doing the things he does. Jesus tells us, “I tell you most solemnly, the Son can do nothing by himself; he can only do what he sees his Father doing; and whatever the Father does the Son does too.”<sup>192</sup>

#### **12.5 Being proud of your heavenly Father.**

After my ordination as permanent deacon (October 3, 1975), there was a procession of the clergy who took part in the celebration. Leaving the sanctuary, the procession went down the center aisle of the basilica, then to the church basement to remove vestments and to meet guests. As the procession made its way, a newspaper reporter stepped out of his pew and asked me, “Mr. Poulin, why did you become a permanent deacon?”

I remember our eyes locking. This was not just a reporter asking a question. This was the community, the world who wanted to know— “Raymond, why did you do what you did?” In a nanosecond, several suitable answers crossed my mind. Ah, which was going to be the appropriate one?

Because there is a shortage of priests?

Because I wanted to help?

Because I had spare time on my hands?

Happily, the answer I gave was none of these.

“Because God asked me.” I replied.

I was ordained a few minutes ago, and now— for the first time in my adult life I publicly affirmed the presence of God as a real Person. The next day the story appeared on the front page of the newspa-

ashamed or embarrassed of being associated with Him. How would you feel if your own children were ashamed or embarrassed of you as their parent?

Whether it was because I was proud to be His son or because of the ordination (probably both), He gave me two gifts in this ministry, the gift to speak with simplicity and to speak with authority on matters where the Kingdom of God is concerned.

~

I often dine with associates while we discussed business. On these occasions, I was always uncomfortable with the matter of grace before meals. On the one hand I did not want to embarrass my guests or have them feel uncomfortable with a formal, solemn prayer of grace. On the other hand, I did not want to be ashamed of saying thank you to our heavenly Father for those wonderful meals and delightful occasions we have together. I eventually resolved this when just before eating I would raise my hands a little, look up and say, "Way to go Dad!" With smiles of approval, my fellow diners agreed.

### **12.6 Your royal responsibilities.**

Your Highness, it behooves you with all the happiness and pride you are capable of, to give praise and glory to our heavenly Father in all things.

You must:

seek to do His will,<sup>193</sup>

carry out His works,<sup>194</sup>

thank Him for His blessings,<sup>195</sup>

do only those things He does,<sup>196</sup>

honor Him,<sup>197</sup>

worship Him in Spirit and Truth,<sup>198</sup>

act in His name,<sup>199</sup>

believe in His Son,<sup>200</sup>

know Him in Christ Jesus,<sup>201</sup>

preach what the Father has taught,<sup>202</sup>

speak of what you have seen with Him,<sup>203</sup>

faithfully keep His word,<sup>204</sup>

lay down your life for Him.<sup>205</sup>

be one with the Father,<sup>206</sup>  
 speak what the Father tells you,<sup>207</sup>  
 ask Him anything in Jesus' name,<sup>208</sup>  
 receive His Spirit,<sup>209</sup>  
 bear much fruit,<sup>210</sup> and

make His name known to mankind<sup>211</sup> as Jesus has taught us  
 and continues to teach us how.

On this point, our dear Mother Mary counsels Venerable Mary of Agreda, saying, "... I wish that thou write this advice into thy heart. Whenever thou must perform any interior or exterior work, consider beforehand whether what thou art going to say or do corresponds with the doings of thy Lord, and whether thou hast the intention thereby to honour thy Lord and benefit thy neighbour. As soon as thou art sure that this is thy motive, execute thy undertaking in union with Him and in imitation of Him; but if thou findest not this motive let the undertaking rest."<sup>212</sup>

As I read and listened to her counsel, as I look and see how I live, it is abundantly clear that I am aggressively hostile to God's great commandment and to His children who have chosen to live by it. I must change, for His sake, for my sake and for your sake.

"Then they said to him, 'What must we do if we are to do the works that God wants?' Jesus gave them this answer, 'This is working for God: you must believe in the one he has sent.'"<sup>213</sup> Our blessed vocation as God's children, as His ministers, is to believe in the one he has sent and to reign in the name of Jesus our King.

### **12.7 The bottom line.**

If you were asked, "What is the most important word in the Bible?" would you reply, "Jesus?" What would Jesus say? "Father!"

If you and your spouse are to live in the fullness of peace and contentment which is your lot as God's Child, with all your heart, with joy and delight, you will live and breath the word "Father" as Jesus our Brother teaches you and me how.

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

Jesus says, "I have said these things to you while still with you; but the Advocate, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you everything and remind you of all I have said to you."<sup>214</sup>

Your Highness, notwithstanding my deficiencies, this entire book is the work of the Holy Spirit. I happily share these personal experiences with Him, with you. With all my heart, I hope they will be of some assistance to help you discern His presence and to live in communion with Him. Monarchs in the Kingdom of God will, by their vocation, bring God's love to Others wherever they may be. Love is the Treasure you and your spouse are to minister in His name.

### **13.2 Voice of the Holy Spirit.**

"Then Yahweh himself went by. There came a mighty wind, so strong it tore the mountains and shattered the rocks before Yahweh. But Yahweh was not in the wind. After the wind came an earthquake. But Yahweh was not in the earthquake. After the earthquake came a fire. But Yahweh was not in the fire. And after the fire, there came the sound of a gentle breeze. And Elijah heard this; he covered his face with his cloak and went out and stood at the entrance of the cave. Then a voice came to him..."<sup>215</sup>

When the Holy Spirit speaks, He speaks lovingly, quietly, calmly, peacefully, clearly, simply and with authority. Speaking to you from deep within your heart, His presence and His voice are undeniable. Self-revealing, He speaks only once but with words that have a staying power. He leaves no doubt about His message and waits in silence for your response. Couples must help each other learn to listen.

### **13.3 Voice of false pride.**

The voice of false pride is in sharp contrast to the voice of the Holy Spirit. When it wants its way, it constantly yells its opposition to the voice of the Holy Spirit. Its screams are loud and troublesome, constantly repeating its reasons why this or that prompt from the Heart should be disregarded. False pride in rebellion is very noisy, very forceful and very assertive. Constantly challenging you, it does not stop until you make your choice or it wins you over from the prompts of the



ten to what you have to say, as you walk out of the house or town shake the dust from your feet.”<sup>216</sup> and, “I tell you solemnly, whoever welcomes the one I send welcomes me, and whoever welcomes me welcomes the one who sent me.”<sup>217</sup>

#### **13.4 Prompts from the Holy Spirit.**

When you receive prompts from the Holy Spirit, acknowledge them with the happiness, delight and the gratitude of a child, for He reminds you again that you are not alone. How very consoling is the presence of the Lord, for “in thy presence is fullness of joy.”<sup>218</sup>

#### **13.5 Holy Spirit's presence in teaching.**

Once I was a resource person to members of various parishes. My assignment was to help organize pastoral teams for the ministry of baptism. At one particular workshop, we were discussing the consequences of original sin. Suddenly a raised hand signaled a question: “Why does my baby have to be baptized? He hasn't done anything wrong. Why does he have to pay for sins committed by others?”

In the tone of her question, I detected the presence of a spirit other than that of the Holy Spirit. This made me very uneasy but even as she was asking the question, I could hear very clearly the voice of the Holy Spirit from within. I heard Him say, “Do not worry, here is the answer you will give.” In a flash I saw it and understood it. My excitement was such that I could hardly wait for her to finish asking her question so that I could reply. My uneasiness left me. There were 125 persons at this session and their eyes were now on me. It was obvious this question was also of interest to others. Now they were waiting for the answer as well. When she finished, I asked her, “Your son was born a Canadian citizen, was he not?”

“Yes,” she answered.

“Was he responsible for any part of our national debt?”

“No,” she answered.

“This debt was incurred by us, our parents, their parents and their parents and so on. He is not responsible for any of the debt we created. Nevertheless, because he was born a Canadian citizen, he will be asked to pay his share of that debt will he not?” I asked

### **13.6 Holy Spirit's presence in ministry.**

In the ministry of baptism, I am challenged from time to time by non practicing parents. They ask, "Why is it important for them to be living and practicing their faith before having their new born baptized?"

How could I share with them the importance of this? After much reflection I asked our dear Lord for His help. Now when I'm asked, I take out a miniature planting pot and a large seed.

"The planting pot (I explain), symbolizes your family, the Church. This seed symbolizes your new son." The seed was then placed in the planting pot. I then poured water over the seed.

"What do you think will happen now?" I asked.

"The seed will eventually rot," they replied.

"Why?" I asked.

"Because there is no soil, seeds cannot grow without good soil." they said.

"You are right," I replied, "water without soil does more harm than good. It is good soil that enables the seed to grow. Water keeps the soil moist. Moist soil encourages the seed to open and to take root in it. A seed cannot take root in water alone and survive for very long. It will soon rot and die."

"The soil needed for your child to grow in," I continued, "is the faith of the church, your faith. Water symbolizes the sacraments, but unless this seed (your child) is rooted in the soil of your faith, water (the sacraments) will do him more harm than good. Indeed, unless you are rooted in the soil of faith, water (the sacraments) will also contribute to your death."

"Your son (like this seed) needs to grow in good soil, in the faith of the church he was born in. This means that he must grow in the living soil of his father's and his mother's faith, a faith that's alive and healthy. He needs to be with parents who have strong roots, roots that will enable him to grow tall, full of branches and be able to bear much fruit. In your hearts you know this is the kind of soil you want him to grow in. That is the kind of soil the waters of baptism can nourish."

"If you believe this to be true prepare this soil now so that

~

Your Highness, this is a very small insight into the power of the Holy Spirit. No one can deny His Truth. He is a Friend within you to help you and to guide you in making the Kingdom of God visible to all mankind. He is a Friend to help you do Godly things; “Ah, what is man that you should spare a thought for him, the son of man that you should care for him? Yet you have made him little less than a god.”<sup>220</sup>

Your Highness, with the Holy Spirit you have a Friend you can depend on, a Counselor and a Teacher who will never abandon you. With Him, raise a strong, healthy, fruitful family in the rich soil of faith.

### **13.7 Holy Spirit helping at work.**

Once I was designing a spreadsheet template on my computer. The program would automatically recalculate changes in property taxes, then calculate their impact on the various boards and agencies. It would also prepare the proper journal entries, adjusting taxes for owners who changed their school support or whose properties were destroyed by fire, or were demolished, etc.

Along the way I hit a brick wall and could not program an important link between two sets of data. After days of trying, I asked the Holy Spirit for help. “Dearest Holy Spirit, I've tried everything. You who have brought this wonderful, incredible, complicated creation into reality, dearest loving Spirit, show me what to do to bring this program to an end. What is the simple answer to this very complicated problem?”

In an instant, I saw the formula and it was very simple indeed. I couldn't wait to get to the computer to make the proper entries, knowing before I even started that this was it! It worked! Like a grateful child, I embraced Him in my heart and We carried on. “Whatever you ask for in my name I will do, so that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If you ask for anything in my name, I will do it.”<sup>221</sup>

Your Highness, there is nothing our dear Lord likes more than to be with you, to share with you and to help you make God's Kingdom visible to everyone. This is why both of You are here.

I asked him to picture a very large field. The crop had been harvested and the field was now covered with stubble. The field was being plowed (with the old type of plow pulled by horses) but there were no horses pulling this plow. I also asked him to visualize some massive boulders here and there in the field. There were also clusters of trees, straight and tall, located on large islands of grass here and there throughout the field. Their majestic boughs giving the only shade to be had from the very hot midday sun.

“The large field represents the Church,” I said.

“The plow plowing the large field symbolizes Vatican II and the plough itself is moving under the power of the Holy Spirit. Notice that all that is left on the large field is stubble. Now the plow is turning the soil to nourish the earth (Church), which must now produce a new harvest. Nothing is lost, everything is used.

The few very massive boulders in the field are large obstructions in the way of the plow and represent obstacles in the way of the Church and Vatican II. They have been there for a very long time, but because the field is so large, they do not pose any threat to the size of the crop that will eventually be harvested. The Holy Spirit (Vatican II) simply goes around them.

The very tall trees with their majestic shade-giving boughs clustered here and there throughout the field symbolize the treasures and traditions of the church.<sup>222</sup> These will stay in the field. The plow (Vatican II) simply furrows around their extended, welcoming and refreshing grass enclosures.”

I had delivered His message. The bishop thanked me, we chatted and I left.

This was a time where the Holy Spirit asked for my help. May I always be disposed with a happy heart to run these errands for Him. You and your spouse will be called upon often to speak the Spirit’s prophetic voice.

Your Highness, always walk hand in hand with the Holy Spirit. Converse with Him in all things. Share with each other as two friends together on a journey. He cannot do without you and neither can you do without Him. Truly there is no other God as close to us as is our God, “And indeed what great nation is there that has its gods so near as

about one hour of active preparation for each minute of homily. This does not include passive preparation (subconsciously reflecting on the gospel message well ahead of beginning the active preparation). In my case, much of the labor in homily preparation was in sifting out and purifying my own thoughts and experiences. This was essential. The Holy Spirit must be in complete charge to say what He wants to say to His children.

There were times when I simply could not get a homily together. I would go to mass with my meager notes, wondering what was going to happen. To my surprise, the pastor would tell me, "Raymond, today we have a visiting missionary who will be giving the homily."

Other times he would say, "Raymond, today a member of the parish council has a report to give to the parish. This will replace the homily."

This was so often the case, I always knew when I would not be giving the homily on a particular Sunday. At those times I simply assumed that the Holy Spirit had something else planned for that Sunday.

Once, however, my efforts to prepare a homily were unusually futile. Thinking that all my difficulties were because my pastor had something else lined up for that Sunday, I simply stopped trying. When I got to church that Sunday, much to my surprise, he did not have anything else planned. No visiting missionary, no parish councilor, no special event.

The time came to read the gospel and to give the homily. I asked the celebrant for his blessing and walked to the lectern not having a clue as to what would be the first word from my mouth.

Would you like to know what it is like to go to the edge of a high cliff and jump and all you can do is either fall or fly? Go to mass on a beautiful sunny Sunday morning. Stand at the lectern in front of a full congregation of upper-middle class families waiting for you to share God's word with them and... you have absolutely no idea what you are going to say.

As I was walking those few steps to the lectern, I remembered what happened to Peter as he was walking on the water to our dear Lord. He started to sink because he took his eyes off our King. He

done in such circumstances.”

This should be our approach in all instances when we feel we are in danger, when we feel that events around us are overwhelming, when we feel vulnerable and susceptible. Do not look at the waves and the wind, the terrifying events around you. Always, always, always keep your eyes, your heart and your trust on your dear Lord and keep going to Him.

### **13.10 Holy Spirit bringing back sheep to the flock.**

One day while I was raking the fall leaves, a neighbor crossed the street to speak with me.

“Raymond,” she said, “week after week as I saw you cutting the grass or working on the lawn, I wanted to come and speak with you, but never had the courage until today. You know Raymond that.(name) her husband is very ill. Because he is paralyzed, I have been caring for him these many years. What you do not know is that although I go to church, I have not received the sacraments for over 28 years. You see, Raymond, (name) and I are not married. He was already married when we decided to live together. A short while later he became paralyzed and I have been looking after him ever since. Raymond, we would like to be at peace with God and I do not know whom to turn to or how to go about it. As I watched you each day working around the house or coming and going, I felt that I should speak to you and ask you for your help. Raymond, I apologize for bringing my troubles to you, but I do not know what to do or where to go.”

In my heart, I leaped for joy. This wonderful, gentle person, mustering all her courage (and it took a great deal) was asking God to help her and her husband to be full members of His family again. How they must have suffered, all the years they were separated from Him.

I told her I would be happy to help. I thanked our dear Lord for directing His loved one to me that I may be of service to Him. I thanked Him for the trust He placed in me, that He might bring His Love to them.

During the next while, I met with the bishop and discussed the situation with him, getting his advice on what could be done. I then went to a very special priest one full of compassion and tenderness

she invited a close friend to be with them. That evening, our dear Lord came into their hearts sacramentally for the first time in 28 years. “If my father and my mother desert me, Yahweh will care for me still.”<sup>225</sup> It was so very very long ago when they last heard these beautiful words, “Behold the Lamb of God who takes away the sins of the world.” This was a Christmas like no other. Whereas earlier the home was somber and overcast, it was now bright and alive. The sound of Christmas carols took on a new dimension of heavenly joy.

Receiving our dear Lord into their hearts after such a long absence, brought excitement and tears to these two very tired souls. It was as if we were with the shepherds that eventful night two thousand years ago, when a great throng of the heavenly host sang, “Glory to God in the highest heaven and peace to men who enjoy his favour.”<sup>226</sup> Peace was now a Resident in this household.

After communion, we celebrated and rejoiced with a small Christmas party. About a year later he passed away.

“And indeed, what great nation is there that has its gods so near as Yahweh our God is to us whenever we call him?”<sup>227</sup> You and your spouse must never forget this.

[There is no marital situation that God cannot heal. At the right moment He will invite you to come to Him, and like this lady, the next move will be up to you.]

### **13.11 Holy Spirit melting a heart.**

Once, a municipality hired me to tutor a person as a municipal clerk. About the fourth day (while we were having coffee in the cafeteria) this person suddenly began to cry with tears that gushed from the very depths of her soul. My first thoughts were, was I the cause of her tears? Was I too demanding in my tutoring? Was she discouraged with the way the lessons were going? Fearing that somehow I was responsible for her tears (although I had no idea why) I quickly brought her back to the office. Eventually, between deep gasping sobs, she told me what happened:

“You have been here three days and for three days I have been looking at the cross on your lapel. I cannot look at it any longer without

home in the country. He owned a small farm that was very close to his heart. If ever there was a person who was a born farmer, he was it.

Unfortunately, his wife saw farm life as a bit degrading and wanted him to be successful as a municipal clerk-treasurer. Because of this, he was very unhappy and often angry at her, seeing her as an obstacle to his happiness. He had to work very hard to be a municipal official while farm life was second nature to him.

The three of us were together in the living room discussing municipal problems. All through the discussions, he kept shouting at his wife. He was trying to show me through his statements to her that she was the cause of their unhappiness. The situation was rapidly getting out of control, him getting angrier and angrier and she becoming more and more embarrassed at what was taking place.

I brought the exchange to a halt and invited them both into the kitchen. Then I asked them to kneel on the linoleum floor while I prayed over them. It was a typical farmhouse kitchen, lots of room, lots of rocking chairs, wood stove, painted wooden slat cupboards, a varnished stairway leading upstairs... all very flavorful.

I prayed over them, laying my hands on their heads, asking our dear Lord to bring His peace into their hearts and to resurrect in each of them the gifts of their sacrament of marriage, that with His grace they may be each other's strength and happiness.

Before giving them the blessing, I opened my eyes for a moment, only to see that a thick, light white mist was gently swirling over the entire kitchen floor. Then, in an instant, it completely disappeared. At first I thought smoke had somehow come from the fireplace in the living room into the kitchen. But I saw there was no fire in the fireplace and no smell of smoke. All of this happened in the space of a few seconds.

I completed my prayer and blessing, after which they opened their eyes, embraced each other and rose from their knees. Peace reigned in that home once more.

"I have dispelled your faults like a cloud, your sins like a mist. Come back to me, for I have redeemed you."<sup>228</sup>



pregnant, railway personnel with problems at home and other persons who simply wanted to talk about God. We talked in the diner, in the club car, in the dome car, in the coach. We chatted in first class, in the day-liner, and even once while washing my hands in the washroom.

In all instances, God's loving arms welcomed, embraced, and listened to His children, their concerns and their difficulties and gave them renewed hope and strength.

### **13.14 Life in the Kingdom of God, anything but dull.**

Your Highness, life in the Kingdom of God is not dull. It is tiring, draining, demanding and full of the unexpected, but very consoling. There are miracles galore happening every day in all kinds of situations, for where He walks, life flourishes. You and your loved one will find it most gratifying working with our dear Lord and God in your corner of His vineyard.

“Now John in his prison had heard what Christ was doing and he sent his disciples to ask him, 'Are you the one who is to come, or have we to wait for someone else?' Jesus answered, 'Go back and tell John what you hear and see; the blind see again and the lame walk, lepers are cleansed and the deaf hear and the dead are raised to life and the Good News is proclaimed to the poor; and happy is the man who does not lose faith in me.’”<sup>229</sup>

### **13.15 The bottom line.**

Dear Child of God, the Holy Spirit is your Friend and Counselor. As unbelievable as it may sound, God the Holy Spirit is our Friend and Counselor. “... the Advocate, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in my name, will teach you everything and remind you of all I have said to you.”<sup>230</sup>

It is inconceivable to even imagine that anyone can take his or her place in the Kingdom of God (now, at this very moment, here, in this world) without walking hand in hand with God the Holy Spirit. After you read this book and learn more about discernment, awaken to the presence of the Holy Spirit in your life every hour of every day. Let Him teach you. Respond to His prompts. Keep your heart still and quiet for He will not compete with the noise and clamor of the world for

counsels of the Holy Spirit is to suffer heartbreak after heartbreak after heartbreak.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 14.**

### **Your Mother Mary, Queen of Heaven and Earth.**

#### **14.1 Jesus' Mother, our Mother.**

“Seeing his mother and the disciple he loved standing near her, Jesus said to his mother, 'Woman, this is your son.' Then to the disciple he said, 'This is your mother.’”<sup>233</sup> Your Highness, our dear Lord kept nothing for himself, He gave everything He had to you and me, even the sweetest delight of His most Sacred heart, His Mother Mary.

#### **14.2 Our Mother's heartbreaks.**

Poor Mother Mary! There is probably no greater heartbreak for a mother, than to see her children in pain and not come to her for help. She longingly yearns to embrace lost hearts, to nourish hungry hearts and to console lonely hearts. Too many of us, quite simply, do not have a Mother/son or Mother/daughter relationship with our dearest Mother Mary. Both suffer immensely.

#### **14.3 Reaching your Mother Mary.**

How do we reach our dear loving Mother Mary? Remember when you read that the name contains the person and that the Word Jesus, is the Kingdom of God within you? Let's look at that text again: Dwelling within you and I is the Word (Jesus) through whom “all things came to be.”<sup>234</sup> In Jesus' name, through whom “all things came to be,” is every spirit, every angel, every man, every woman and every child, whoever was, whoever is, and whoever will be, and that includes our wonderful loving Mother Mary.

We reach our heavenly Mother Mary by embracing Jesus within our heart and meeting our dear Mother Mary there, in Him. In other words, to be with Mother Mary we have to go to Jesus, her Home, for it is there where she lives. How wonderfully blessed we are to have such a gentle maternal heart to share with, to seek counsel from, to care for us and to intercede for us. There never was a child who did not go to

as mother and child.

“Look at the moon,” I heard her say in my heart, “what is it made of?”

“Dust,” I answered.

“Where does it get its light then, which it reflects so brightly in the darkness of the night?” she asked.

“From the sun,” I replied.

“If you wish to be like me, remember that you are dust and that, in the dark night of this world, your Light comes from the Son of God,” she said.

Dearest Brother and Sister in our dear Lord, are we not blessed to have such a loving mother like our Mother Mary? Always present- always ready to bring us to Her Son.

#### **14.5 Examples of Mother Mary's assistance.**

Florence and I have six beautiful children who, of course, have now settled into their own lives. As they were finding their places in the world, we asked Mother Mary to watch over them. We asked Her to have Her angels protect them. No matter where they were or how far away they were, we knew She would be there to help us watch over them. Thank you dearest Mother Mary.

~

When two of our children were married they were living far away from home, but in their milieu they had wonderful “parents” to help them with their wedding plans. Thank you dearest Mother Mary.

~

On another occasion, one of our sons was in a serious ski accident, again far away from home. He survived without loss of limb and without permanent injury, thanks to a gifted doctor who gave him the care he needed. Thank you Mother Mary for your presence with our children.

#### **14.6 Mother Mary's power.**

One summer (like every other summer on Canada Day), all eight of us boarded our trusty Volkswagen minibus and took off on our annual vacation. That year our holiday was going to be just a bit dif-

see, lots to do and good food to boot. Finally, dead tired from all the fresh air and walking, we boarded the minibus and headed back for the trailer park. That's when I saw it! I could not believe it. Lying there, waiting for me, like a sleeping dragon with its great crest of steel rising high above its asphalt back, was the Pierre Laporte bridge over the St. Lawrence river.

I'm terrified of heights and here was this incredible bridge... waiting for me. Tomorrow we had to cross it to continue our journey east. I thought we would be crossing by ferry, but the service was not available. I had no idea that we had to cross a bridge of this length and height. It was an immense bridge, a towering metal monster, one could not see the other side since it arched high in the sky. I said nothing to the family, but I was flabbergasted! How could this have happened? We're on vacation! This was a time to be carefree and enjoy the adventure of travel in new lands!

Only those who have a fear of heights would know the terror one experiences in such situations. I require an enormous amount of mental preparation to simply climb a ladder to change a light bulb under the carport. How was I going to cross this bridge with its many lanes, so high and over so long a stretch of the St. Lawrence River? And what was the other half like, the half that I couldn't see? How was I going to prevent myself from freezing, from being glued to the wheel? Such was the terror I felt.

Once back at the trailer park, we prepared the children for their night's rest and got our things together to continue the trip early next morning. I had nothing else on my mind but this unbelievable intrusion, forced on me during what was supposed to be a happy, care-free holiday. Neither Florence nor the children had a clue what I was going through, nor could they know how my stomach was twisting and turning over this unexpected confrontation.

My only recourse was to ask our dear Mother Mary for help. Please Mother Mary, do something! Don't let me be an embarrassment to Florence and the children. I'm afraid of freezing on the wheel, of creating a traffic hazard and maybe even causing an accident there—high in the sky. I had visions of a traffic pileup and cars dangling over the edge of the bridge. P-l-e-a-s-e help me. What was I going to do? The

quiet, newly washed street, turned left and headed for “it.” No one could have any idea of the terror the driver of this Volkswagen minibus was going through. Then... there it was, a large blue sign sneering as it screamed out to me, “PIERRE LAPORTE BRIDGE NEXT RIGHT.” This whole event was now one terrible nightmare. I was overwhelmed. I felt so alone. The moment seemed so final. “Mother Mary PLEASE help me to overcome these terrible feelings.”

Helpless to do anything else, I moved toward it. Cold fear gripped me once more as I turned right and headed for the bridge on ramp. As expected, my hands froze to the wheel. My eyes were glued to the road immediately in front of the van. I did not dare look elsewhere. Fear had made me as stiff as a board. The minibus slowed to a crawl. Only sheer willpower brought me inch by inch onto the steeply rising ramp to the bridge.

Then it happened.

I couldn't believe it.

**The bridge was nowhere to be seen.**

A heavy thick grey fog suddenly enveloped everything in sight. I could not see ahead of me, nor the sides of the bridge, nor the massive steel structure on top of the bridge, nor the sky above, nor the river far below. The fog was so thick I switched the headlights on. All I could see was the dark grey asphalt immediately in front of me. For all practical purposes I was driving on nothing else but a paved road. I couldn't believe it! All my fear and fright suddenly turned into a giddy delight. An enormous burden was lifted from my back. The children were heartbroken— there was nothing for them to see. I “sympathized” with them as I happily drove across this bridge that was “no longer there.” I was simply driving on a paved road.

“Thank you Mother Mary. Thank you! You're wonderful.”

#### **14.7 Mother Mary's anniversary gift.**

One year, on the anniversary of my ordination, I was feeling sad because I was not actively involved in a parish ministry. Earlier my ministry was with a parish that was a real microcosm of the Kingdom of God. I longed for a ministry in an active parish. Why was I ordained and not doing anything when so many need help and there are

It's no accident that when you look after others, others look after you. Florence and I, under Mary's care, gave a fair amount of time doing volunteer work at the local hospitals, caring and loving persons who were ill and alone. During this time, Mother Mary saw to it that others were caring for and loving our children, who were far away from home, who needed a mom and dad near them at those particular times.

How could Florence and I have survived without the assistance of dearest, wonderful, loving, Mother Mary? Her maternal presence safeguarded our relationship as friends, sweethearts, husband and wife, father and mother, and as Her children.

I am pleased to share these few experiences with you, a few out of many, where our dearest Mother Mary is active in our lives helping us along the way.

#### **14.8 Prayer to Mother Mary.**

Your Highness, may I share with you a prayer to our dear Mother Mary? This prayer was written for a person who was very ill and hospitalized. She was so angry, discouraged and demoralized that she did not have the heart to try to put any prayerful thoughts together, so I wrote this prayer for her. Happily, she regained her health and left the hospital to again enjoy life in this beautiful creation.

#### **14.9 Prayer to Mother Mary.**

Dearest Mother Mary, Oh most gentle and faithful mother, I bring my poor heart to you that I may find refuge in your loving care and concern for my well-being.

Oh most wonderful and sweet consolation given by Jesus to mankind, I too have been given to you by your most Holy Son. Mother, keep my heart in yours, always. Protect me from anything that could separate me from you.

Dearest most loving Mother Mary, I give you my poor sufferings and heartbreaks. With your pure and supplicating hands, place them in the sacred and holy Heart of your Son Jesus. May the flames of His divine love purify them for the salvation of souls such as I.

*In thy loving care, oh wonderful Mother Mary, I place my poor*

#### **14.10 Books about Mother Mary.**

There are many wonderful books on Mother Mary, information that the church and the saints have gathered over the centuries. Read them and learn all you can about this most precious gift Jesus has given to you. She will be your joy and consolation. Two that I recommend are:

1. Papal teachings on “Our Lady.” published by the Daughters of Saint Paul.

2. The Mystical City of God, by Venerable Mary of Agreda (four volumes or an abridged version) Read a little each day for the rest of your life.<sup>235</sup>

#### **14.11 The bottom line.**

Our dearest Mother Mary was crowned Queen of Heaven and earth. The Blessed Trinity is so pleased with Her, They entrusted to Her all of creation. Is it conceivable then, that as a Monarch in this very same Kingdom, one can govern without its Queen? Of course not. Each and every day, your government in the Kingdom of God has to be in consultation with the Queen of Heaven and Earth, your Mother Mary.

Using a diary or a journal, share with your dear Mother Mary. With a child-like heart share your day with Her. Share your ups and downs, your joys and your sorrows. Ask questions. Tell Her of your dreams. Present your petitions. Place your complete trust in Her. With the Queen of Heaven and Earth at your side, your reign as Monarch in your corner of the Kingdom of God will be fruitful indeed.



This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 15.

### The Royal Banquet.

#### 15.1 Holy Thursday.

Your Highness, in the Kingdom of God each day is Holy Thursday, a day when you and other Monarchs from all the realms are invited to be with our dear Lord who reaches out through time and space to be with us.

“This is my body which will be given up for you; do this as a memorial of me.” He did the same with the cup after supper and said, “This cup is the new covenant in my blood which will be poured out for you.”<sup>236</sup>

For with God, “a thousand years are a single day, a yesterday now over, an hour of the night”<sup>237</sup>

What blessed function! What dutiful delight! What royal obligation, that you as a Monarch in the Kingdom of God, wearing your baptismal robe, receive the “Bread of Life”<sup>238</sup> from the King of kings,<sup>239</sup> from the hand of the Lord God of Hosts.<sup>240</sup> There is no greater event in any other kingdom. The angels marvel at how much God loves you. Each day you are invited to sing with them: “Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God of Hosts, Heaven and earth are full of your glory. Hosanna in the highest. Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord, Hosanna, in the highest.”<sup>241</sup>

Through His Minister, His loving hand brings to yours His gift of Himself, His confirmation of His eternal love for you, and His daily proof of His commitment and of His faithfulness to you. He whom the universe cannot contain confirms again and again His need to dwell in your heart.

As Monarch in the Kingdom of God, it is your destiny, your Highness, to sup with Him each day at His royal banquet table. You need not fear that duties of state will suffer while you are there, for “... He said, 'It is already done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End’”<sup>242</sup> So nourished, reign in thanksgiving. Give praise

Bread.”]

The reason going to mass is so laborious a task for many, is because “going to mass” means walking or taking the car or bus, driving to church, parking, waiting, standing, sitting, praying, paying, kneeling, answering, singing, signs of the cross, leaving, driving or walking or being bused back home. This is not a very appealing way to spend thirty minutes or an hour.

I used to ask those present at the retreats, “How many masses have been celebrated since Holy Thursday?” The replies were numbers of astronomical proportions. In fact, only one mass is continuously celebrated, that of Holy Thursday itself. Our brother Paul tells us, “To suit us, the ideal high priest would have to be holy, innocent and uncontaminated, beyond the influence of sinners, and raised up above the heavens; one who would not need to offer sacrifices every day, as the other high priests do for their own sins and then for those of the people, because he has done this once and for all by offering himself.”<sup>243</sup>

The mass Jesus celebrated on Holy Thursday is the only one needed for our salvation. But it is a mass that is ongoing and will be ongoing forever. Every time we attend mass, we are present at Holy Thursday’s celebration, in our corner of the Upper Chamber. Jesus is present in our parish priest, speaking and reaching out to us from Holy Thursday. Here, time and space curtsy in reverent accommodation to our Lord’s Holy Presence. His Body and Blood of Holy Thursday is the same Body and Blood He is offering to you and me, wherever you and I are when we attend mass. At mass, we are in fact in the Upper Chamber, symbolized by our parish church..

Attending mass, then, is being with our dear Lord, His Mother, the apostles and disciples, His angels and saints. He nourishes us with His Body and Blood that we may continue on with Him, on His and our ministry, His and our passion, His and our death and resurrection. We continue with Him, walking where He walks, living where He lives, praying where He prays, healing, preaching, teaching and giving glory to God as He has taught us and as He continues to teach us through His mystical Body, this blessed Church.

all God's Children.

Dearest Jesus, my God, my King, my Savior, my Friend, blessed is Thy holy Name for your Priestly Presence at this altar.

Blessed is Thy holy Name my Lord and my God, for your daily confirmation of your Love for Me, for the purifying waters of reconciliation.

Blessed is Thy holy name Jesus, for your loving word in these readings, for this plate and this cup you set before me, for your Body and your Blood, your gift of eternal life with You.

Blessed is Thy holy Name my King, for caring so much for me, for being with me day after day. I cross this desert land with you my Lord, that glory and praise may be given to our Father forever and ever and ever.

Blessed is Thy holy name my Lord and my God, for dearest Mother Mary, for the gift of being Her child, for Her love for me, for Her example, for Her loving counsels, for Her maternal concerns, for Her Royal intercessions, for Her guiding hand.

Blessed is Thy holy Name my Lord, for this Church where You minister to me, and for Your caresses and embraces through your word and your sacraments, You show me the Path for your Peace, for the gift of service for God's greater glory, now and forever and ever and ever. Amen.

### **15.3 The bottom line.**

Daily nourishment of Jesus' Body and Blood is a royal duty for Monarchs in the Kingdom of God. Receiving the Word and the Body of Christ, they are instructed, nourished and strengthened that they may carry out their royal assignments as God's own Governors. I know it's not possible for everyone to attend this sacred banquet every day, but do attend at every opportunity Heaven gives you.

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 16.**

### **Royal Banquets, Corn Husks and a Fatted Calf.**

#### **16.1 Saying, “No.”**

Your Highness, in spite of all you have received, you still have the power to say, “No!” to your heavenly Father; “No!” to His loving Son and “No!” to the Holy Spirit. In fact you still have the power to say, “No!” to who you are.

What happens when one says, “No!” to our King? Each time we say, “No!” to the grace of God, we are slowly isolating ourselves from the Life and Light of Jesus. When this happens, we default to our own knowledge, our own darkness, our own isolation and our own hunger and starvation. Slowly (as we saw with the effects of sin), our soul, lacking spiritual oxygen, suffocates, shrivels up and eventually dies. Without Gods’ Love and His Life that issues therefrom, the terrified soul starves to death.

Each time we say, “No!” to the grace of God, we say, “No.” to the flow of Life from Him to us. If we persist on such a path, our heart will become hard and dry like a barren desert. If that happens, everything within us will eventually die. Your Highness, this is not our lot.

If we are to bear heavenly fruit if we are to make good decisions, (decisions that will encourage life and creativity in others and in so doing give glory to God), we must dwell in Christ Jesus and He must dwell in us, for as He says very clearly, “cut off from me you can do nothing.” What cuts us off from the Vine, from Him? A love for sin.

[Persons who choose to live by their own strengths and resources all of their life, who choose to live by their own vision of what is important, who choose to live by their own priorities– will one day find themselves in a dark corner with nowhere to go. When a crisis does strike, they are unable to turn to God, whose Love and Presence they have either constantly denied or turned their hearts from. Such individuals have deliberately chosen to live

breaking and how very sad. Such individuals are unable to run through the doors of death into their King's arms. Staff in palliative care will tell you, "You die the way you live."]

### **16.2 Leaving our Father's home.**

There was once a simple but very elegant flower pot. It was home for some of the most beautiful lilies in the world. Though they all looked alike, each was very different from the other and each contributed generously to the beauty of the whole. All were delightfully delicate and full of life. Collectively, they were a burst of immaculate splendor.

But all was not well in this floral community. One flower continually lamented, "I don't want to live with these other lilies. I don't want to be a part of this dull family where nothing ever happens. I want to be on my own... in my own elegant flower pot. I want to leave this terrible place."

So for a long while, it suppressed the life-giving nutrients from coming into its stem. Its colors began to pale as the stress of denial went on and on and on. Each day all the lily could think of, was that it was one day closer to freedom. Each day, the stem dried up more and more.

Then one day, the lily felt strangely different. The drying stem was turning brittle and weakening. The weight of the bloom caused the weakened stem to lean over further and further. The flower sensed its upcoming freedom and with anticipation prepared itself for leaving this terrible, dull and boring place. Suddenly it began to droop sideways and it soon fell out of the pot. As it was plummeting through the air, you could hear it singing, "Free, free, I'm free at last. Wheee... Oh!"

Without warning it hit the floor. Dazed, it began to cough from all the dust that was now choking it (there was no fresh air here). Sensing its new surroundings as alien for its survival, it frantically began to search for water and soil, but none was to be found. Neither was there any life-giving light.

With terror in its heart, it saw that what it chose to believe to be true was completely false, an illusion, but now it was too late. Looking at its stem, it saw the break area which by now had blackened. It no longer had the sweet task of bringing life, color and majesty

tearing its fragile remains apart. "What have I done? What have I done? Oh..."

Like the lily, the person who says, "No!" to God's Love does exactly the same thing. This terror is compounded when such a person is also head of a family and subjects his or her spouse and children to follow in his darkness... they who are in the Light. No wonder there is friction and confrontation, no wonder there are broken hearts. No wonder families are torn apart.

Your Highness, our choices must change from a constant stream of, "NO!" "NO!" "NO!" to Gods' Love for us, to:

"Yes my loving Father."

"Yes my dearest King."

"Yes, Lord Holy Spirit, faithful Friend and Counselor."

"Yes my blessed Mother."

"Yes angels from heaven."

"YES! YES! YES! my Lord and my God."

The sacrament of reconciliation is no luxury or frill. It is indispensable in preventing you from being asphyxiated by your own breath. This life-restoring sacrament gives your eternal soul the spiritual oxygen it needs to survive, to love and to forgive.

Your Highness, it is necessary to receive often, a renewed assurance of God's love, trust and confidence in you. Simple human failings, preoccupations, impatience, frustrations and the like eventually begin to separate us from Him. Our dear Lord knows this. When these things happen, He is there to reassure you in a personal and intimate way, through His loving sacrament of reconciliation. Through His minister, He is there, with open arms and an understanding heart, to receive you, to hear you, to say:

"I understand."

"I know... it's not easy."

"I love you."

"I will give you everything you need to succeed."

"Do not worry, I will always be with you."

"Here is a suggestion you might consider..."

"Now that you know why this has happened, you are much stronger for it. Now you can discern dangers like this in the future."

Him from moving heaven and earth to be with you.

It is not even necessary for you to ask for forgiveness, since Christ did this for you when He said, "Father, forgive them, for they know naught what they do."<sup>245</sup>

Sincere repentance for having broken your Father's Heart and for having harmed those He has placed with you is all that you need; its all that you can say and do. Receive Jesus' loving embrace often. Hear Him tell you, "I love you, I love you, I love you. All your sins are forgiven. Do not worry, we will always be together."

Over the centuries our dear Lord welcomed saints and sinners, beggars and kings, murderers and thieves. His arms are open to everyone, persons from all walks of life, from all backgrounds and from all kinds of situations. There is not a thing He has not forgiven anyone with a contrite heart. It would be a real tragedy for you if you thought there was something you did that He could not forgive. This would break our dear Lord's heart, more than your transgression. How would you feel if your child thought this of you? Would it not break your heart if your best friend felt this way about you? Do not let anything prevent you from receiving the peace and security of His forgiving arms.

How close is Jesus' loving embrace? He is as close as His minister in this most beautiful sacrament of reconciliation. Do not hold anything back. Why should you? Your lot as God's child is to walk tall and proud, not to cower or slink through this wonderful Life He gives to you. God will never abandon you. Do not abandon Him.

Sweethearts should receive this wonderful sacrament together. Each loving heart needs the reassuring consoling peace of our dear Lord. Afterwards, let there be a celebration— Whether it's an ice-cream cone or an evening dinner, for truly there is no other God as close to us as is our God. "And indeed, what great nation is there that has its gods so near as Yahweh our God is to us whenever we call him?"<sup>246</sup>

Your Highness, do you want to have Life, Love and Light for your soul and for those souls God confides to your care? Receive His loving arms in the sacrament of reconciliation as often as possible. It is only in being comforted by His forgiving embraces, that you will find the joy and heavenly euphoria in forgiving Others. "Those who prove victorious I will allow to share my throne just as I was victorious myself

Would you like to bring him the holy Eucharist?"

Your Highness, imagine yourself in the arms of a person with whom you are deeply in love. Then, for 32 years you chose to close your heart to that love. For most of your adult life you rejected his or her loving exhortations, choosing instead to live in cold indifference to her supplications. Now, as if awakening from a terrible nightmare, 32 years later you find yourself face to face with that loving heart, still there... still waiting for you.

For 32 years this soul said, "No!" to his King's Love. Now, because of a miraculous, "Yes!" because of our Lord's forgiving Heart, his own dead heart is now alive once more. Now, 32 years later, the cherished memories of that first love are resurrected into a full, living, vibrant reality in his life once again. His heart will again beat as it did during those tender moments 32 years ago. The emotional impact of such a reunion staggers one's imagination.

The next day I went to his room. I did not know who was more nervous, him or me. I asked our dearest Mother Mary to help me be a dependable minister for our dear Lord, to let me help Him seal this loving reconciliation with His gift of Himself. Excitement filled my heart. During the introductions we both felt the eternal dimension of the moment envelop us. The event so overwhelmed me, I could not read all the preparatory prayers.

I told him how happy I was to be with him at this very special time in his life. Taking the pix from the table I opened it, removed the sacred Host, held it up, met him in the very depths of his soul and said, "(Name) behold the Lamb of God, He who takes away the sins of the world." At this point, tears started to run down his cheeks. I responded for him, "Lord, I am not worthy to receive you..." but could not finish. My heart was overwhelmed.

After being away for a lifetime, He was once again back in His Lord's loving embrace. He closed his eyes and embraced his King. In this loving reunion, he was now oblivious to my presence. "At the favorable time, I will answer you; on the day of salvation I will help you."<sup>248</sup> There was nothing else for me to do but to leave him and Jesus together in their special personal love for each other. On his bedside table, I left a picture of our dear Mother Mary. I had written a prayer on the



me, in His wonderful sacrament of reconciliation.

#### **16.4 Our prodigal escapade.**

Many of us (like the doctor and this sick man) have sinned this way. One way or another we told our heavenly Father:

“Father, I want my youth. I want my health. I want my strength. I want my future. I want my dreams. They all belong to ME. They are mine. I'm going somewhere where I can make better use of them, better than staying here and living with You where nothing exciting ever happens.”

And so we left our home (our heart) and went to a very distant country. Some went to live in the land of logic and reason (their head), and others to the land of the flesh, promiscuity and permissiveness (their body). After awhile, after we squandered our youth, our health, our strength, our future and our dreams, we suffered a great famine. We starved for real love, for real fulfillment, real security, and for real peace. We were dying for want of real love, for want of relishing the happiness of being really alive.

We soon realized that the food in these far away countries (the land of reason and the land of the flesh) was neither nourishing nor satisfying. It was fit only for animals who ate everything and anything thrown to them, no matter what it was. It was not food that we were used to as Monarchs in the Kingdom of God. And then (like the doctor and this sick man) one day we remembered how happy we were in our heavenly Father's home (our heart). Here we received real food. His cupboards overflowed with the nourishment of true love, of real peace, of real security. This is our true home, here are our real roots.

Like the prodigal son, many of us then left those foreign lands to return home. We told our heavenly Father that we sinned by leaving Him and His bountiful, liberal and extravagant Love for us. We told Him that we were truly sorry for having hurt Him and wasted those precious gifts so generously given to us by Him. We asked Him for His forgiveness, to be able to live at home, with Him. He welcomed us with open arms and celebrated our return with a Royal Banquet.

ly there is no other God as close to you and who loves you as your God.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 17.

### The Crown Jewels.

#### 17.1 Seven precious “Stones.”

Your Highness, your baptism resurrected you into the Body of Christ, into the Tree of Life,<sup>251</sup> into His Church. In Him you remained hidden until your confirmation when you branched out and became visible as a unique manifestation of His presence in this world.

In honor of your coming of age, at your confirmation, you were invited to wear the priceless crown jewels of:

Wisdom.

Understanding.

Knowledge.

Counsel.

Piety.

Fortitude and Fear of the Lord—

gifts you received at your baptism. You need these priceless treasures to reign as Monarch in the Kingdom of God. Let's take a closer look at their worth.

#### 17.2 The gift of Wisdom.<sup>252</sup>

Jesus tells the apostles (and through them He tells us), “I myself shall give you an eloquence and a wisdom that none of your opponents will be able to resist or contradict.”<sup>253</sup> Your Highness, to help you reign and make the Kingdom of God visible on this earth, your King gives you an eloquence and a wisdom that none of your opponents can resist or contradict. Can you imagine what power this is? When you reign on His behalf, no one will be able to resist you or contradict you. Here is but one example.

~

Once, a parish priest serving a small country parish asked me to give the homily on a particular Sunday. I remember his instructions well: “Explain to the congregation what ‘indissoluble’ means.” he said

“How can I explain ‘indissoluble’, not through an intellectual delivery but as a simple revelation of the Truth?” I read and meditated, read again and meditated again and again and again... Finally, I asked our dear Lord for His help.

That Sunday, I placed a table in front of the altar, on it were three wine glasses (two small and one large). The large wine glass could contain the contents of the two smaller wine glasses. One small wine glass was filled with water and the other small wine glass was filled with wine.

I then explained to the congregation that each small wine glass symbolized the state of celibacy. The liquid in each small glass symbolized the person living in that state. The larger wine glass that could contain the two smaller ones symbolized the state of matrimony. When persons marry, they leave their life as a celibate to begin a new life in marriage. Because of marriage, they become greater than what they were as celibates. As I explained this, I slowly emptied the smaller glasses simultaneously into the larger wine glass. This symbolized each person leaving self to become (in marriage) one with the Other. Once both small glasses were emptied into the larger wine glass, I asked if there was a doctor or a nurse or a lab technician in the congregation. A gentleman came forward. After introductions, I asked him, “Would you take this large wine glass and pour into this small glass the water that came from it and pour into the other small glass the wine that came from it?” The volunteer (who was listening very attentively) stepped back and with a puzzled expression said, “That’s impossible!” The congregation echoed in laughter at the absurdity of my question.

“That, my dear brothers and sisters, is what ‘indissolubility’ means. They are no longer two, therefore, but one body. So then, what God has united, man must not divide.”<sup>255</sup>

The truth of the statement was self-evident. No one could deny what they saw with their own eyes. The statement was final. The gospel for that mass was that day, revealed to those parishioners as indeed the Word of God must always be. The pastor was pleased with the way the lesson was taught. I thanked our dear Lord for helping me bring His message to His children for His assistance to help His child-

Your Highness, with the crown jewel of Wisdom in Jesus' name, govern over your heavenly Father's affairs.

### **17.3 The gift of Understanding.**

Understanding enables your faith to penetrate deep into God, deep into His eternal Truth, to “see the Truth” and not just to know It. “Yes Father, I see and I understand.” With the crown jewel of Understanding, God lovingly confirms your participation in His very Being, sharing everything He has with you. Your Highness, with His gift of Understanding, in Jesus' name, govern over your heavenly Father's affairs.

### **17.4 The gift of Counsel.**

It now behooves you, as you participate in God's Love and Truth, to be seen by mankind as a sign of the Spirit presence, restoring creation for God's greater glory. With this crown jewel you will counsel, animated with Love for the Truth. Filled with Wisdom and Understanding, you will counsel instinctively and surely on matters that cannot be resolved by reason alone. It is with His gift of Counsel, animated by God's Love for the Truth, that I share with you through this book— on God's presence in our lives, today, now, at this very moment. Your highness, with His gift of Counsel, in Jesus' name govern over your heavenly Father's affairs.

### **17.5 The gift of Fortitude.**

Enlightened by the gifts described above, the crown jewel of Fortitude enables you to reveal in the darkness of this world— Jesus, the Light and the Truth. The gift of Fortitude enables you to make the Truth known, no matter how great the opposition, that creation may be restored for God's greater glory. Writing this book (sharing with you the Holy Spirit's love for the Truth) has taken four full years and a number of months part-time. Thanks be to God for His gift of Fortitude, for I truly believe this task to be His wish for His children.

### **17.6 Example of the gift of fortitude.**

*After my faith crisis in 1972 I met Father Nourry my parish*

so strong, so determined, so unstoppable and so violent it seemed inexhaustible; I was frightened out of my wits. The sound resembled (though this is far from being a good description) what one would hear when rotating a long thick switch in the air at very high speed. On the one hand, I feared the church was going to be blown apart; on the other hand, there was a living power in the wind. The sound was alive and filled with self-determination. I was terrified. I ran out of the Church without daring to look up to see what was there. Once outside, in very sharp contrast everything was peaceful, quiet and sunny. Shaken, bewildered and confused I slowly began my walk home. I often regretted not having gone back to Father Nourry at that moment to tell him what happened. I am sure he would have responded to the event better than I did. If it was the Holy Spirit (and I believe that It was), may He please forgive me for having run away in fear.]

When I eventually met the archbishop, he listened to me very patiently, and then referred me to the dean of theology at St. Paul's University. At that time, there was no university program for the permanent diaconate in the archdiocese and if there were to be any permanent deacons, it looked like I would be the first. Door two opened.

The dean of theology listened to me very attentively and then told me that I would hear from him shortly. Two or three months went by and no news. I returned to see the dean again and renewed my desire to begin. "My hands are in eternity," I told him, "and I do not know what to do with them." Again he told me there was no course of studies at the university for the formation of permanent deacons. He said that if there was to be a course of studies for the permanent diaconate, the university senate would have to give its approval first. He would meet with the university senate and would be in touch with me shortly. I left and again waited for his reply.

Meanwhile, a person very high in the church hierarchy told me in no uncertain terms, that the diocese did not need permanent deacons. Fortunately, a visiting bishop (who just happened to be in the room) overheard this and told me not to get discouraged and to contin-

that she was unable to understand our teacher, leave alone what he was teaching. Here I am, a grade 10 graduate, sitting next to them and other university students and members of the clergy. Everyone was French and an academic except me. I felt like I was on another planet. What was I doing here? This was ridiculous. I felt like an impostor. Who was I trying to impress? I did not belong in this milieu. I decided to leave at class break and go back home where I belonged. I closed my books and waited.

Finally, it was time for class break. I picked up my things and went to the door. When I tried to open the door, however, it would not move. I'll never forget that moment. I then saw that if I was going to leave, it would only be because of my decision to leave and not because it was God's will. Startled and awakened anew to the reason I was here in the first place, I said to Him, "Very well Father, I will do my best, but I cannot do this without your help." To make the most out of this situation, for the next three months I translated this course from French into English. This I did brick by brick (word by word), whatever way I could. Because of this, I completed the course better than I would otherwise have done. I passed. Door four opened.

On it went for the next three years through all the other courses (most of which were in English) and all doors opened, one after another.

Then one day, I received a telephone call from the archbishop's office asking me when I could meet him. When we did meet, he said, "Raymond, I received a letter from the dean of theology at St. Paul's University. He tells me you have satisfactorily completed the required course of studies. When can we ordain you as the first permanent deacon in this archdiocese?" We agreed on a date and other details.

When I left his office and was back on the street, I could have jumped over the diocesan center, such was my joy. The many walls and barriers in my path either fell or made way for me to pass. How can one not have fortitude when the Lord God is at his side? In my heart God said I was going to be a member of his clergy and so it was. He opened my path like He parted the Red Sea. He brought me from a land that was not my home to one that was. He fed and nourished me. He washed, dressed, exercised and armed me to proclaim forever more

your King's name, govern over your heavenly Father's affairs.

### **17.7 The gift of Knowledge.**

Knowledge is the gift of knowing in Christ Jesus. To the extent you accept, embrace and participate in God's gifts of Wisdom, Understanding, Counsel and Fortitude, you will know what there is to know when you are to know it, in Christ Jesus. Throughout this book I have tried to share with you many events where this gift was made manifest in my life since my conversion. Your Highness, with His gift of Knowledge, in Jesus' name, govern over your heavenly Father's affairs.

### **17.8 The gift of Piety.**

The crown jewel of Piety is the capacity to treasure life and everything that sustains it, because it is your heavenly Father's property, sacred property. "... all the earth is mine."<sup>259</sup> Because of the gifts described to you earlier, you should now see everything with the eyes of a child of God and make all your decisions accordingly. You are His son, you are His daughter— His business is your business and your business is His business.<sup>260</sup> Your Highness, with His gift of Piety, in Jesus' name, govern over your heavenly Father's affairs.

### **17.9 The gift of Fear of the Lord.**

I am continually awed by all the Love that surrounds me— real, personal, caring, concerned love focused on my happiness and well-being. God is literally loving us to death, that we may one day be together Face to face— forever. Such Love is given by persons who obviously are outlets for God's Love, for God alone is Love.<sup>261</sup> This often frightens me. I am filled with awe, with wonderment and confusion at all this love, quite simply because I did not think I was so special to be loved that much. We cannot be loved like this without responding. We cannot take so much love for granted. Many personal sacrifices are being made to care for and watch over me. To be loved by another in God's name requires a response— a life in grateful humility and prayers filled with thanksgiving, praise and benediction. Loving Others in His name, is a natural response, a natural comportment, for One who is loved so much by God



**17.10 The bottom line.**

Your Highness, the crown jewels you received at your baptism, are worn from the time of your confirmation, a time when you will need them most, a time when you begin the wonderful adventure of living the life that lies ahead for you. In return, your holy vocation is to produce much fruit. In Christ Jesus, you are to bring honor and glory to your heavenly Father, from Whom you came and in whose image He made you.

Pray, read and learn all you can about these precious treasures. Walk in our dear Lord's footsteps. Ask your Mother Mary to teach you how to wear your jeweled crown (your baptism and confirmation) with pride and with authority. Ask Her to help you learn from Her Son. You will become all that you really are and your happiness will be complete. Remember Jesus tells us, "It is to the glory of my Father that you should bear much fruit and then you will be my disciples."<sup>262</sup>

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 18.

### Your Royal Physician.

#### 18.1 "The Lord will help them when they are sick."

The Psalmist tells us that, "The Lord will help them when they are sick and will restore them to health," <sup>263</sup> and the prophet Ezekiel tells us, "I take no pleasure in the death of anyone - it is the Lord Yahweh who speaks. Repent and live!"<sup>264</sup>

St. James says, "If one of you is ill, he should send for the elders of the church, and they must anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord and pray over him. The prayer of faith will save the sick man and the Lord will raise him up again; and if he has committed any sins he will be forgiven."<sup>265</sup>

Your Highness, our dear Lord has done so much for you.

He redeemed you.

He incorporated you into His sacred Body.

He nourishes and strengthens you with His sacraments.

He fills you with the Holy Spirit.

He shares His treasures with you.

He made His dearest Mother Mary, your Mother.

He sustains you with His grace.

He mandates you to help build His church with Him.

He picks you up each time you reach out to Him.

He longs to be with you day after day.

He asks you to be perfect like your Heavenly Father.<sup>266</sup>

Do you think He will let illness interfere with all of this? In sickness as in health we are still members of the resurrected, healing, life-giving body of Christ. Through the sacrament of the sick, in the sufferings and difficulties of our illness, Jesus embraces us with a very special Love.

In sickness, He comes to you:

-through His minister, a visible sign of His presence with you.

-with Holy water. He reminds you of your presence in His resur-

-in prayers and litanies, this blessed opportunity enables you to ask God to help you bear the pains of illness and to protect you against temptation, fear, discouragement, despair and alarm. Humbly, you ask our Lord for His compassion on you and to help you live your Royal Priesthood in union with His sufferings and death.

In the laying of hands He brings the fullness of His Spirit on you.

In your anointing with blessed oil, a visible sign of this sacrament, of His presence with you at this special time in your life.

In the Eucharist, our dear Lord nourishes you with the healing power of Himself. By His presence in this most Blessed Sacrament, Jesus reminds you again of your participation in the fullness of Christ. Our body has the sweet task of receiving His Life, sacred tabernacle that it is.

Your Highness, your illness is another opportunity for you to glorify your heavenly Father, since He is to be glorified in all things. Remember...

-the paralytic who was cured by Jesus and went home, "praising God?"<sup>267</sup>

-the crippled woman who was healed on the Sabbath, "straightened up, and she glorified God?"<sup>268</sup>

-the blind man from Jericho? When his sight was restored by Jesus he, "followed him praising God..."<sup>269</sup>

In this new creation that you are a part of, sickness, like everything else, is for the greater glory of God. In sickness, your Highness, praise your dear Lord:

For the gift of life in His Love.

For the gift of death in His Love.

For the gift of your wonderful body in His Love.

For the gift of salvation in His Love.

For the gift of health in His Love.

For the gift of sickness in His Love.

For the gift of the Holy Spirit in you in His Love.

For the gift of discerning what real treasures are in His

Love.

For the gift of you sharing (in His Love) His suffering for

For the gift of time in His Love.

For the gift of eternity in His Love.

For the gift of His creation, providing (in His Love) the food and medicines we need.

For the gift of reawakening our awareness to those who (in His Love) love us.

For the gift of enabling us to see (in His Love) how many persons sustain us.

For the gift of His love given to us in so many ways.

For the gift (in His Love) of our earthly home.

For the gift (in His Love) of our heavenly home.

For His gift of peace and serenity in His Love.

For the gift of restoring creation with Him, in His Love.

For the gift of saying (in His Love) with a willing heart and willing lips, "Jesus my King, I love You."

From your bed (now an altar of love), meditate on each gift. Identify all the ways He has shared His love for you in these and all the other ways you can think of. With all your heart, praise Him lovingly for each and every one. This can take days.

Let this wonderful sacrament of the sick be a new opportunity for you to give God praise in all things. It is a loving opportunity to share in our dear Lord's sufferings for our sins and the sins of others—to rescue you from those forces that seek to harm you. He will happily show you once more how much He loves you. "The Lord will help them when they are sick and will restore them to health."<sup>270</sup>

### **18.2 The bottom line.**

A very dear friend of mine became terminally ill with a certain cancer. His constant thought was, "Why me Lord?" This was a good thought but he never said it often enough.

Every day he had; when he saw the blue sky, heard the songbirds, felt the wind on his face, drank a glass of cool water, enjoyed a B.B.Q. or slept on a soft pillow, every such day— was a good day to say, "Why me Lord?"

Every day he had, when his loved one prepared his meals or kissed him with a heart full of tenderness when they cuddled each

Heavenly Father, it's wonderful to be your son. Dearest Holy Spirit, thank you for your presence with me. My faithful guardian angel, God bless you. Dearest brothers and sisters, how blessed I am to be among you. For peace of heart and my good health Father, thank you." Every such day was a good day to say, "Why me Lord?"

In Job 2:20, Job tells us, "If we take happiness from God's hand, must we not take sorrow too?"

Your Highness, every day is a good day for Princes and Princesses in the Kingdom of God to say, "Why me Lord? Blessed is thy holy Name my King, forever and ever and ever. Amen."

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 19.**

### **Your Royal Heritage.**

#### **19.1 Your royal status.**

Your Highness, whether you are a homemaker, or representing your client before the courts, or packing groceries, or designing a bridge, or studying, or sweeping the streets, or taking care of the elderly, or gardening, or fishing, or walking the beat, or healing the sick, or putting out forest fires, you are a member of the Royal family in the Kingdom of God. Look at how many of God's children came from situations of everyday life.

Abraham was a merchant.

Moses was a shepherd.

Mary was a homemaker.

Joseph was a carpenter.

Peter was a fisherman.

Matthew was a tax collector.

Luke was a doctor.

Paul was a tent maker.

No matter what their vocation, profession, occupation, or trade, when these men and women walked on this earth, in all things they served their heavenly Father.

They were first and foremost, persons of goodwill. They saw what they saw and acknowledged God as the Cause. They gave Him thanks and praise for His bountiful gifts. They prayed and petitioned Him when they needed His help. They talked with Him. They were open to a loving faithful relationship with Him. God knew they loved Him. They knew God loved them. Each knew the Other. Each had trust and confidence in the Other. Each knew he/she could depend on the Other. Every day They walked together, hand in hand. They served their heavenly Father faithfully in all things.

These persons had loving personal relationships with God, hour by hour as they carried out their daily duties and saw to their

Where our heavenly Father is concerned, we must have a child-like relationship with Him, like our King shows us.

It is not your biological age that counts. You may be 72 years of age physically speaking, but only three months old where your spiritual growth is concerned. Begin where you are at, while you still have the gift of life to do so. After all, "It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer."<sup>272</sup>

### **19.2 Who are you and where are you?**

Your Royal Castle is the Body of Christ. Because of your baptism, you already live there, it is simply a matter of learning more about your Home, knowing your way around the "House" and living in your Royal surroundings.

Acknowledge and use everything you have as coming from your heavenly Father. As His Child, use everything He has put at your disposal, Prince or Princess that you are. Receive everyone and everything as a sacred trust from the Lord your God.

Your Royal Physician is our dear Lord Himself. Go to Him, let Him receive you in His arms, be healed and reborn, receive new life and be exhilarated anew through His sacrament of reconciliation.<sup>273</sup>

Your Royal robes are the garments of salvation. Integrity is your cloak.<sup>274</sup> Learn how to wear them with majestic dignity as befits a person of your stature.

Your heavenly Father is head of the entire Kingdom of God and of all the realms therein. The Royal realm He has entrusted to your stewardship, extends as far as your sphere of influence can be felt.

Your Mother Mary, Queen of Heaven and Earth, is your Royal Tutor. Learn from Her. Learn from your brothers and sisters who already know Her and were taught by Her. I have tried to show you how to do this. Many others much closer to you can and will help. Do not forget the saints, brothers and sisters who have written to share with you, as one day you will want to share with others.

Your lifelong Royal Companion and Counselor in your realm, is the Lord Holy Spirit, He will teach you everything you must know and more. Ask Him for anything you need.

*Members of your Royal family include the angels and saints*

Your Royal treasury is Christ's Church.<sup>276</sup> It has everything you need. Visit it often, receive the treasures there that belong to you, all at your disposal to help you reign in your realm.

Your Royal sword is your will. Use it all day, every day. Through prayer and fasting keep it razor sharp.

Your Royal genealogy and history are in the Bible. Study it and learn about who you are and where you come from. There, meet your biological and spiritual parents, great grandparents, uncles, aunts and cousins who have gone before you and learn from them. Most of them have accomplished great things. This is a heritage you can be very proud of.

The Royal statutes by which you will govern your realm are spelled out in the gospels. Study them, love them and apply them. It is inconceivable to imagine that one can reign as Prince or Princess in the Kingdom of God, without the Bible in his or her heart. Nourishing one's heart and soul with God's loving words is indispensable if we are to dwell in the house of the Lord. All that man's creation can give is heartbreak, pain, suffering and death. God's creation gives love... love... love...

"Your love is better than life itself, my lips will recite your praise; all my life I will bless you, in your name lift up my hands; my soul will feast more richly, on my lips a song of joy and, in my mouth, praise."<sup>277</sup>

Your Royal Consort is your spouse, that loving encouraging Heart your heavenly Father has placed next to you. Let your heart be filled with awe and wonder, as God's companionship and embracing love come to you through this person.

Your enemy is Satan, the Father of all Lies.<sup>278</sup> Do not under any circumstance, allow any member of his Kingdom into your realm. Do not allow any lie, any thought, any person or any thing that challenges God's right to reign as God, God's right to speak as God, God's right to command as God and God's right to love as God, to enter your realm. Such persons have been exiled from the Kingdom of God.<sup>279</sup>

### **19.3 Comportment.**

Living in this royal household requires that one have an appro-



dispositions required. Jesus, our dear Lord, by His lifelong example, teaches us the importance and the need for humility. No one can live in the Body of Christ who does not share in our King's humility, before God and man.

A humble person is in focus, has a right intention, never tries to deceive or use God or others.

A humble person receives the sacraments to receive God's gifts, knowing their significance, and is ready to do what God asks.

A humble heart keeps one's faith pure, since humility is the only way we can see reality. Our dear Lord gives a humble heart the capacity to see, to know and to believe in Him, the Truth. Pride sees only illusions.

The humble heart remains hopeful on the Creator's mercy, while the proud heart has a false sense of security and independence.

The humble heart is constantly reaching out for Christ's salvific hand.

The humble heart is docile to God's will.

The humble heart has a simple, pure obedience that flows from the love of a Child to his or her Father.

The humble heart is happy and delighted to embrace God's bounteous will as his or her standard of life.

Sanctifying grace can only be given to a heart that is humble enough to receive it. A humble heart is disposed to remove all obstacles to its reception.

A humble heart embraces participation in worship and ritual, recognizes the need for religious reverence, recognizes God as God.

The humble heart is disposed to glorify God in all things.

A humble heart is disposed to fulfil sacramental obligations.

The humble heart says, "Thank you." in words and in deeds. We can easily identify the humble heart by its transparency.

The humble heart is always in a spirit of sacramental encounter with Christ.

The humble heart is a peaceful heart.

Receive your heavenly Father's royal blessings, His garments, His jewels and treasures, with a humble and grateful heart, like your spiritual Queen and Mother, Mary.

fold, more and more will be entrusted to you for His Father's glory.

Prayer is a time to be taught, to be fed and to be nourished. Write down everything you learn.

Prayer is praying the psalms, as you seek to touch God's Heart with every loving sentence.

Prayer is giving glory and thanksgiving to God your Father in all things, in health and in sickness, in riches and in poverty, in life and in death, for all these belong to Him.<sup>280</sup>

It is fitting that one lays their hands in reverence over their heart while they pray, since it is the home of our dear Lord, where the Word is— where the kingdom of God is, within you.<sup>281</sup>

### **19.5 Where do we pray?**

Our dear Lord tells us, "... when you pray, go to your private room and, when you have shut your door, pray to your Father who is in that secret place and your Father who sees all that is done in secret will reward you."<sup>282</sup> This private room is in our innermost being, deep within our heart where Jesus the Word, lives, "... the Word is very near to you, it is in your mouth and in your Heart for your observance."<sup>283</sup> Shutting the door means leaving all noise of the world outside and being alone with your heavenly Father without anyone or anything to disturb you.

One of your most pleasurable functions as Priest, Prophet and King in Christ Jesus, is to pray for others. In your heart, ask your heavenly Father to receive your prayers (in Christ) on their behalf and name them. Ask Him to receive your prayers from their hearts and their mouths. In your own heart assemble them there with you. If you are praying the rosary, in your heart present those you are praying for to your dearest Mother Mary, one family or one person at a time.<sup>284</sup>

### **19.6 Where is your Father?**

Where will you find your heavenly Father? In Jesus' Name, within you. "... the Word is very near to you, it is in your mouth and in your Heart for your observance"<sup>285</sup> and "To have seen me is to have seen the Father."<sup>286</sup>

She also said the most important part of prayer (of any relationship) is to be present to the Other. Take the time you need to be present to your Lord, to your Father, to the Holy Spirit or to your Mother Mary. You may be distracted later, but it is important that you begin present to each other. Praying (like speaking) is empty and void unless we are present to the Other.

One must take the time needed to simply stop and be conscious of what is going to happen. Like Moses, like Mary, like Jesus, we are coming into God's presence in a very personal and intimate way . . . the creature before the Creator. One should take at least 15 minutes to awaken our consciousness to what we are about to do. Am I truly present to God in Spirit and in Truth? <sup>287</sup> Concerns about not having time are feeble arguments in front of our eternal God . . . He who can call you home this night or allow you to live until you are 120 years of age. Time belongs to God- not to us.

Before coming into the presence of the Holy Trinity and our Mother Mary through prayer, one should be as presentable as possible, body and soul, as much as circumstances allow.

We recall that we are here because of Jesus (see 11.5), that we are present to the Father because of the Son, and to both because of the Holy Spirit. <sup>288</sup> Am I listening to what the Holy Spirit has to share with me? To what the Holy Spirit invites me to do, to say? Am I conscious of the fact that I am but dust and this incredible moment is happening because of Christ? (See 14.4.) Am I consciously quiet and listening . . . attentive to what the Holy Spirit, Love divine- has to say to me? Am I disposed to giving the Holy Trinity all the time they want to love me and teach me on this blessed occasion?

If we are praying the Liturgy of the Hours, we should be conscious of the prayer of each psalm. Is this psalm a prayer to the Father with, in and through Christ? Is this psalm a prayer of love and praise to Christ from the Holy Spirit? Is this psalm a prayer for me . . . a message God is giving to me? If so am I listening with all my heart? Am I before the Father as His child in Christ Jesus? Am I present to Jesus as a subject is with his King, as the creature is before his Creator? As a friend is with a Friend? Am I in union with Jesus? With His intentions? Do I realize that prayer is my window to see eternity?

to be.”<sup>289</sup>

Ask your question like a child would ask someone he or she has complete confidence in. Those who are close to God want to ask questions. They need to ask questions. Who could be with the Creator of everything that is and not ask questions? Jesus wants us to ask questions. You cannot carry out your ministry without asking questions.

~

Our father Abraham really showed us how far you can go in asking God questions when he interceded for the people of Sodom. Any other person would have considered him a very annoying individual.<sup>290</sup>

Look at all the questions Moses asked when he was called to lead the Hebrews out of Egypt.<sup>291</sup> And again when he asks Yahweh what His name was.<sup>292</sup> And again when he asks God, “What if they will not believe me or listen to my words?”<sup>293</sup> And again when Moses says, “But my Lord, never in my life have I been a man of eloquence, either before or since you have spoken to your servant. I am a slow speaker and not able to speak well.”<sup>294</sup>

When our dear Mother Mary was a young lady, she was visited by the angel of the annunciation and was told, “Listen! You are to conceive and bear a son and you must name him Jesus. He will be great and will be called Son of the Most High. The Lord God will give him the throne of his ancestor David; he will rule over the house of Jacob forever and his reign will have no end.”

“Mary said to the angel, ‘But how can this come about, since I am a virgin?’”<sup>295</sup> She needed more information before giving her decision. Once the angel told her how this event would happen, she responded, “I am the handmaid of the Lord, let what you have said be done to me.”<sup>296</sup>

Then there was our brother Paul’s wonderful question, “Who are you, Lord?”<sup>297</sup>

~

The Bible is full of events where persons asked questions to God, especially to Jesus (God with us). Jesus expects his children to talk with Him intelligently. That means asking questions. There is no doubt about it. Ask. There is no greater thrill for a person (especially

messages of our dear Lord is, "Ask, and you shall receive." (John 16:24) It's that simple.

### **19.9 How your questions are answered.**

Having a question to ask is like being in a dark room, the darkness symbolizing lack of knowledge on the subject. Receiving the answer is like having the light switch turned on.

What happens when you turn on the light in a dark room? In an instant everything is there for you to see. In the twinkling of an eye, every object in the room is suddenly visible to you. Nevertheless, it would take a long time for you to describe the room and its contents to another.

In prayer, in an instant you see the complete answer to your question. You see the answer and you know the answer, both at the same time. That is why, in prayer, one should take the time needed to savor the response Heaven has chosen to give. After all, God Himself is teaching you. Take the time you need to understand it and to appreciate it. Be sure to embrace it fully into your own particular life-style. This may take weeks or months or years. Indeed, you will treasure each heavenly sharing like letters from home. Like your Mother Mary, you will lovingly keep them in your heart.<sup>298</sup> Many of the questions you may want to ask— others have already asked. The replies are there for you, in print, waiting to be shared with you.

### **19.10 Ask your Mother Mary.**

Do you want to "increase in wisdom, stature and in favour with God and men"<sup>299</sup> like Jesus did? Ask your loving Mother Mary Queen of the universe,<sup>300</sup> anything you want to know that will help you to be the pride and joy of your heavenly Father in Christ Jesus. You will enjoy being with Her, your Highness, for your Mother Mary, Queen of Heaven and Earth, is a member of the heavenly court. She is there to counsel and guide you. Our dearest Mother Mary is, in Jesus, in your heart, waiting for you to ask.

### **19.11 Time for your Father to love you.**

Your Highness in prayer there are also times when there are

does happen, act and do not delay. Stop and spend some time with Him. If you cannot stop (because circumstances do not allow you to do so), share a loving word with Him until you can spend more time together. That inner Voice you hear is God reminding you, calling you, asking you, longing for you to be with Him, and is a sure sign of the presence of the Spirit within you. Our brother Paul tells us, "Everyone moved by the Spirit is a son of God. The Spirit you received is not the spirit of slaves bringing fear into your lives again; it is the Spirit of sons, and it makes us cry out, 'Abba, Father!'"<sup>301</sup>

Conversely, if you cannot remember when you last received this invitation, re-examine your relationship with your dear Lord, for you must be suffering a great deal. Ask Him to bring your heart next to His.

[We are God's children. It is normal to be in a prayerful spirit, praying by what we do or what we say wherever we may be. The "System" has gone through a great deal of effort to make this as difficult as possible. Many are living their entire lives as slaves, building pyramids for the Pharaohs of our time who worship the golden calf. (Exodus 32) In whatever way you know, call out, cry out, scream out to your King. Ask Him to restore you to your throne in your realm for God's greater glory in Jesus' name. Keep your faith in Him.]

### **19.13 Prayer time is learning time.**

You will also learn at what point in prayer the Lord Holy Spirit wants to share His loving counsels with you. In my case, most of the time it is at the very beginning of my prayers. Once I realize that I am in God's Presence, I listen and look very attentively at what is being shown or said to me. I try to be sure I understand. I ask questions. I stop and make notes and then continue in prayer, leaving the revelations aside for the time being. Be sure to receive these blessings with gratitude, for if you do, our dear Lord tells us, "... everyone who has, will be given more, and he will have more than enough; but from the man who has not, even what he has will be taken away."<sup>302</sup>

### **19 14 Prayer our King's gift giving time**

will it take you to love our dear Lord? How long will it take you to learn how to scream for help? That's how long it will take you to learn how to pray. This loving exchange (Thank God!) will go on forever. To begin the process, I have bad news and good news.

The bad news is that our soul can only be united to God in prayer to the extent it is pure and free from all things that are not from God.<sup>303</sup> Once I saw my soul as an "old paint can." It had layer upon layer upon layer of hard, dried-up paint on it (attachments, values, priorities and the many things I loved and held dearly that are not of God). If my soul was going to return to its natural state (pure and free from things that are not from God), all the "layers of hard dried up paint" would have to be scrapped away first. That hurts and it takes time. That's the bad news.

The good news is, the moment you begin you are on the way into your dear Lord's loving arms. Every step along the way is a liberating one, freeing you more and more from things that are poison to your spiritual nature. Every step along the way raises your head higher and higher. Every step along the way is a process where, in growing jubilation, you will meet the real you, that person that God made in His own image. Every step along the way you will be washed, fed, clothed, exercised, trained and given the armor that is yours as a child of the Kingdom of God.<sup>304</sup>

Slowly but very surely, your life will be transformed from that of a slave to the so-called necessities of this world, to ministering and serving your Lord and King with the heavenly host, now and forever and ever and ever. The first step in this transformation is to be of goodwill and to have a pure intention, as you resurrect from the darkness to life in the Light of Truth. It will take time for your spiritual eyes to come into focus.

Ask your parish priest or another qualified person for spiritual direction. If this is impossible, as a temporary measure, write to me and we will begin together until the Lord puts someone closer to home on your path.

Read the gospels and the writings in the New Testament. They are addressed to you personally.

*Read the lives of the saints. They have gone through the very*

Receive every loving event in your day, from a glass of water to your comfortable pillow at night, with a sigh and a prayer of thanksgiving to your heavenly Father. As the days unfold, look and see, listen and hear, ask, knock, seek and discern the emerging events. Your creation will turn to dust while His creation will unfold before you.<sup>305</sup>

### **19.16 How often should we pray?**

This is like asking, “How often should we breathe?” The answer of course is, “always” otherwise, you will die. I repeat, prayer is the spiritual oxygen our soul needs to stay alive, to grow and to blossom. Not to pray is to have one’s soul slowly asphyxiate and die. As your soul gets sicker and sicker, its host body responds accordingly.

How would you feel, if every day, at every meal, week-in and week-out, all you ate was ice-cream, candies, fudge, potato chips, chocolate bars, colas, licorice and so on? Ice cream for breakfast, chocolate bars for lunch, chips and colas for supper, day in and day out. It would not be long before you would get very sick, indeed, sick enough to die. This kind of food simply does not meet or satisfy your nutritional needs. This is exactly what happens when we try to find our happiness by feeding our heart the material things of this world. This “junk food” does not meet or satisfy our spiritual needs. It would not take long before our soul would become very ill followed by physical sickness.

As you are liberated from the slavery of serving the golden image,<sup>306</sup> more of your time will be given to loving, praising and glorifying God. Your day will soon be filled with blessings and praise to your Father, who sees to all of your needs.

### **19.17 Mother Mary.**

You will then look for and find your spiritual Mother Mary. Ask your loving mother, Queen of the universe,<sup>307</sup> anything you want to know. She will help you be the pride and joy of your heavenly Father in Christ Jesus. You will enjoy life with her.

Like a babe learning to talk, your first words will be your own expressions of desire to be taken into Her arms. Slowly, you will discover this Treasure Heaven has made, to guide you to your King’s throne. By Her example and Her maternal counsels she will teach you your



to be the Son or Daughter of this Queen of Heaven and Earth.

Even if there are times when you are not able to complete a chaplet, no matter. What counts is being together, Mother and Child, intimately, intensely and peacefully. Keep your heart close to Hers, always.

The Mystical City of God, a book by Blessed Mary of Agreda, vividly describes the real-life events of each mystery. This book is indispensable in knowing about your dearest Mother Mary. Use all your faculties (memory, imagination, knowledge etc.) to reflect on the mysteries. She will share her life and her counsels with you. As She relives each of these mysteries of Her life with you, I recommend that you draw or paint the scenes you see. This will help you to remember and meditate— almost as if you were there.<sup>308</sup>

As Her growing presence warms your heart more and more, the egotistical ice will slowly melt; it will drop one Hail Mary at a time until it becomes a streamlet, then a stream, then a river of love that will carry you into Her arms.

### **19.19 The Psalms.**

The Psalms is a book in the Old Testament, "... in which God inspired the feeling that His children ought to have toward Him and the words they ought to use when speaking to Him. They were recited by Jesus himself, by the Virgin Mary, the apostles and the early martyrs. The Christian Church has adopted them unchanged for Her official prayer. Unchanged: the cries of praise, entreaty and thanksgiving, wrung from the psalmists by events of their own times and by their personal experiences, have a personal note, expressing as they do the attitude that every man should have toward God."<sup>309</sup>

As your union with your heavenly Father becomes increasingly intimate, He will reveal Himself to you more and more. As this relationship grows, praying the psalms will indeed be a very enriching experience. Through the Psalms you will take your rightful place as a member of the family of God. The Psalms are worthy exchanges between us and God, the creature and the Creator. There are psalms for every occasion. They must be a part of your spiritual repertoire.

prayers for all the liturgical seasons of the Church year. Those who can pray the Liturgy of the Hours faithfully, will enrich their spiritual lives immensely.

### **19.21 Community prayer.**

In community prayer we pray together, as we help each other across this earthly desert. It is much better to travel through this hostile environment with brothers and sisters who can help one another than to risk it alone. As in all long and dangerous crossings, the less you take with you the better. God will not abandon you. He will see to your needs.

### **19.22 “Spontaneous prayer.”**

I often get very caught up in my work. To be sure that I do not forget what my life is all about and why I am here, I have my computer remind me every hour to stop and to praise God. This I do by turning my eyes from my work and saying in my heart, “Father, blessed is Thy holy Name, for Thou hast crowned the splendor of your creation with the beauty of our dearest Mother Mary.”

This prayer was chosen because our dearest Mother Mary asked that we give thanks to God often for all He has done for Her, our Mother. I invite you to take it, and praise God for bringing dearest Mother Mary into our lives.

From time to time, I meet persons who have told me they simply do not know how to pray. Then yell, I tell them, cry out and scream for His attention, He will come to you and see what the problem is. “Yahweh, my God, I cried to you for help, and you have healed me.”<sup>311</sup>

### **19.23 The bottom line.**

There are many blessings to being a Monarch in the Kingdom of God, but there is none greater than to be united with your Royal Family, in loving praise and benediction to God, “To the One who is sitting on the throne and to the Lamb, be all praise, honour, glory and power, for ever and ever.”<sup>312</sup> As you grow as God’s Child, you will soon be saying prayer is everything and everything is prayer. Amen

*Marriage in the Kingdom.*

*Part Two.*

*Heartbreaks.*

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 20.**

### **Heartbreaks in the Family.**

#### **20.1 Confusion over priorities.**

Your Highness, many families suffer needless, very painful and cutting heartbreaks because some parents (unknowingly) are confused where their priorities are concerned. They want their children's love to sustain them and then turn their hearts on them when they (the parents) feel they are not loved properly. This misplaced expectation causes terrible heartbreaks for the parents and for the children. Why? Because it is the children who need to be sustained by their parents' love.

Such parents are persons who quite simply do not love themselves or each other— a sign that they do not have a childlike relationship with our dear Lord. If they did, their Love would well and overflow into the hearts of their children. The children would then find the love they need in their parents, where they expect it.

It is they (the parents) as Monarchs in the Kingdom of God who have the divine mandate to channel God's Love, forgiveness and understanding through them to their children. This, parents do quite naturally if they themselves live as God's children. If children do not find this life-giving Food (God's Love) at home, they will instinctively seek it elsewhere, for it is indispensable for their survival.

To make matters worse, over and above all their other problems, these Love starved children, still have to learn where our dear Lord fits in their lives. Life will be one needlessly long perilous journey. Precious years, opportunities for being truly alive will be lost. They should have met their heavenly Father at home, in their parents' Love for each other, as His children in Christ Jesus.

To these parents, I urge you to find in our dear Lord, in each other and together, the Love that your King has for each of you. Your human hearts must be aflame with Love for Jesus, who has shown you how much He loves you and how singularly special you are to Him. Then you will happily love yourself when you see how special you are

Body of Christ (Church) must heal the sick member first; then, he or she can bring a healthy Love and a healthy Life to spouse, children, members of the community and to other parts of the Body.

Because of their instincts for survival, children know if their parents have real Love or not. They simply cannot survive in a nest where Love is faked or nonexistent or artificially fabricated or hypocritical. Such a love does not come from their parents (who are there for them in God's name) but from strangers. Our King tells us that the reason His sheep follow Him as their shepherd, is that they know His voice, and "They never follow a stranger but run away from him: they do not recognize the voice of strangers."<sup>313</sup>

From the moment of their conception, children need to grow on real Love, God's Love, given to them through their parents, not on something else given to them by strangers. How is this done? The following text from Father John C. Haughey's book, "The Conspiracy of God, the Holy Spirit in Us." says it best.

"Peter had to be asked three times about his love of Jesus because being a practical man he probably was focusing on the tangible, the manner, the efforts that would have to be made to do the work of pasturing the lambs and sheep. But what Jesus is teaching him by His repeated questioning is that lambs and sheep will be fed, not by Peter's concern for them nor by his service of them but by his believing love of Christ Jesus. He had to be asked three times in order to finally focus on what it was that would be service Kingdom-style. He is not being commanded to love, he is being asked whether he does. To the degree that he does, the sheep are led, the lambs are fed. The degree of Jesus' presence to him and his presence to Jesus is the way the sheepfold will be safe and the sheep pastured. This illumines the passage in Ezechiel 34:11-16, about the manner and immediacy of God's presence in the new dispensation.

'Thus says the Lord God: I myself will look after and tend my sheep. As a shepherd tends his flock... so I will tend my sheep. I myself will pasture them... shepherding them rightly.'

Jesus is not relinquishing His function to Peter and the others. He is describing the manner of His presence. Through Peter's love of him and others' love of him, a flock would be gathered and pastured "

His question with, “Yes, Lord I love you. You know I love you. Help me to love you more and more.” Only then can one help Jesus to tend HIS flock.]

Sweethearts in marriage can minister in God’s holy service, hand in hand, heart to heart, by loving Jesus together, that He their Lord and their God may “tend His sheep (His children) and pasture them. ”What greater security can two hearts in love have, than to know that the King of Kings watches over them and their family? This is the way the family is blessed, the Church is built, and how the Kingdom of God becomes visible on this earth.

[Whatever else parents need to love their children, information and experience are indispensable. To be competent in anything you need good information and good experience. The more information you have, the better your experience will be. Good information begins with our dear Lord, His Church and the Holy Spirit– all available to you through the parish, prayer, the example of others and good books. Since all first-time parents are necessarily without personal experience, obviously they need a great deal of information to minister this area of their marriage.]

## **20.2 Right and Wrong.**

Your Highness, what do most heartbreaks have in common? They were caused by persons who live by the rule of “right” and “wrong.” Persons living by the rule of right and wrong usually consider everything they do as right and everything the other does as wrong. They are always right because they make the rules. Such persons have replaced a loving relationship with a regulatory one. Why have they done this? Very simple, they do not know how to love. That is why they live by their code instead of love, God’s code. Love knows no rule. Love simply loves. Right or wrong has nothing to do with love. Right and wrong are rules for someone’s notion of correctness. Such correctness is the enemy of goodness. “I have noticed limitations to all perfection, but your commandment has no limits at all”<sup>314</sup> Prompts that divide or sen-

That, is being a perfectionist.

#### **20.4 The good person.**

A father comes home from work. His son drops what he is doing, runs to meet him, throws his arms around him, squeezes him tightly and shouts: "Hi dad! Boy, did I ever miss you. Am I ever glad you're home, dad. Gee dad, I missed you!"

That is goodness. As this was being written, I began reflecting: "How was I receiving my Lord and my King at Holy Communion? Was I receiving Him into my heart with a proper written speech of welcome, or did I throw my arms around Him and say...? How do I meet Him in reconciliation? In prayer? In others?"

#### **20.5 An example of God's goodness in creative action.**

Each time I visit my dentist, he reminds me of these words from Genesis, "God saw all He had made and indeed it was very good."<sup>315</sup> As this devoted person worked on my teeth, he was continually saying, "That's good. Great. Couldn't be better. That looks just fine. There, that's much better. Wonderful."

"God saw all He had made and indeed it was very good."

In such a setting, through this person I felt God's presence as He continued His creative work on me, repairing my teeth to help keep me healthy.

#### **20.6 Right and wrong, the enemy of Goodness.**

Having traveled a bit, I wanted to share the pleasures of dining out with the children. So, one Sunday afternoon I took the family out for an expensive dinner at a first class restaurant. This was going to be a treat because they were going to have the very best. Florence and the six children (three beautiful daughters and three handsome sons) resembled a bouquet of spring flowers. The table was well set with its starched linen, silver cutlery and accessories. Eventually, the maitre d' took our orders and a little later the servings began to arrive. Everyone and everything were just beautiful. Then it happened, I started giving orders.

"Don't use that spoon "

hearts with my rules and orders. Hearts that God placed in my care to be loved and nurtured were terrorized— all because of MY RULES on what was right and what was wrong. I deprived them from receiving His love and enjoying the delights of His creation through me. I made a good thing a very bad experience in their lives.

What should be done in such circumstances? When that voice in your head, tells you that what you are doing is ok because you are right and the Other is wrong, this is a sure sign that you are in the wrong. This is not the way of the Holy Spirit. Go to that person you so needlessly hurt and ask for his or her forgiveness. Love that person even more and try and make up for the harm you have done. With a renewed concern for his or her welfare and happiness, heal the pain and suffering you caused him or her. Do not be deceived, living by the code of right and wrong is pure poison in any relationship. Let me repeat: **LIVING BY THE CODE OF RIGHT AND WRONG IS PURE POISON IN ANY RELATIONSHIP.**

With a code like this, you and those around you will suffer terribly. You will answer to your heavenly Father for your actions. How will you explain to Him, why you found it necessary to crush the weak and helpless with your rules? What words of wisdom will you use on Him to justify this abuse of power and authority? What arguments will you present to Him that will explain the necessity for causing them to suffer so? How will you explain breaking their hearts because of your rules on what *you* saw as right and what *you* saw as wrong? What cause was so important to you that it was necessary to bring confusion and despair into their hearts? And if they die because of your rules, you will surely die because of His. If they lose hope because of your rules, then surely you will lose hope because of His. What makes all of this even more horrendous is that God made us in His image, in the image of Jesus. Our holy vocation as children of God is to bring LIFE to others, not to paralyze, sterilize, frighten or terrify them. “I have come so that they may have life and have it to the full.”<sup>316</sup>

How will you explain to your heavenly Father that you, His child, His ambassador for Love and Life, did emotionally, psychologically, spiritually or mentally hurt and bruise His son or daughter? How will you explain to your heavenly Father that you caused the death of a



help make this point a lot clearer.

Shirley grew up in a home without a father. She never saw her mother hug or kiss a spouse or show any signs of romance which sweethearts normally have for one another. Because this environment was the only one she knew, quite naturally (without knowing why), when she married, she was not prone to hugging and kissing her spouse, though there wasn't anything she would not do for him. So, he gives her a tongue lashing day after day because she does not know how to act as a loving, romantic wife should. How dare he?

In bewilderment and confusion, Shirley will spend the rest of her married life in fear and heartbreak. Her dream of being married to her Prince Charming and living happily ever after will instead be one lifelong pain, receiving abuse and put downs. She expected love and tenderness but will receive, instead, anger, shouting, loneliness and even physical abuse. All this because he decided that, in such matters, he was right and she was wrong. How will he explain this to His heavenly Father?

~

One day when Simon was three years old, he ran through the house looking for his mother. Eventually he ran into her bedroom. She was changing clothes and was naked. When she saw him, she screamed at him, "GET OUT OF HERE!"

Startled and terrified, he ran out of the room and waited for her in the hallway. Alone and filled with confusion he wondered, "Why did she do this? What did he do that was so wrong?" Because of this incident, Simon was left with a fixation of his mother and her body. Now married, Simon finds that his wife condemns and criticizes him for his interest in her. Confused about what is happening, his life has now become one long reopening of a very painful wound, a wound he feels but does not see. From the person he expected would be his friend and companion, he now receives criticisms, rejection and heartbreak. All this because she decided that, in such matters, she was right and he was wrong. How will she explain this to her heavenly Father?

~

Many persons have been hurt like this. Persons who were rejected by their mother while in her womb. Persons who were abused by

guarded.”<sup>317</sup> Relationships based on right and wrong will never bring happiness to you or to another.

It was of persons such as these that our dear Lord speaks of when he says, “Obstacles are sure to come, but alas for the one who provides them! It would be better for him to be thrown into the sea with a millstone put around his neck than that he should lead astray a single one of these little ones. Watch yourselves!”<sup>318</sup>

Security and comfort for the abused, lie in taking refuge in the Kingdom of God, where there is love, life, understanding, healing, revitalization, the making of creation anew and a bringing of the Other into full bloom.

[What is important for these persons (and we are many) is to embark on a program to find the reasons why we do what we do and to correct the course we were given on the ocean of life. This should take place the very first time we become aware that something is not quite right in our vision or our understanding of life. It should be understood however that not all emotional wounds can be healed. The important thing is to know the kind of scar we have and (now conscious of its existence) to make adjustments to our life-style accordingly. Begin by sharing your concerns with a person who has your complete trust and confidence. Whatever counseling you receive (and outside help is needed) one thing is indispensable, prayer. If you do not know how to pray, in your heart cry and scream to your heavenly Father for His help. Receive the sacraments with all the excitement of a babe finding a mothers nipple for it is here where you will be fed real life and knowledge for, “Neither wisdom, nor prudence, nor advice, can stand in Yahweh's presence.” Proverbs 21:30.]

The Monarch who governs in the Kingdom of God will ensure that the abused and mistreated will live the rest of their lives loved, nurtured and protected from harm. Their voices will then rise and sing to their heavenly Father in praise and benediction for having brought these Monarchs to their rescue and bringing them back home. Prompts

unites is good; everything that divides, is bad.”<sup>319</sup>

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 21.

### Power to Forgive, Treasure of the Kingdom.

#### 21.1 Reconciliation.

Your Highness, there is one thread that links all the events of Jesus' life; He longed to see hearts reconciled with each other and with God.

†

Our King tells us, “if you are bringing your offering to the altar and there remember that your brother has something against you, leave your offering there before the altar, go and be reconciled with your brother first and then come back and present your offering.”<sup>320</sup>

†

Our Brother tells us, “if anyone hits you on the right cheek, offer him the other as well.”<sup>321</sup>

†

Jesus tells us to, “love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you; in this way you will be sons of your Father in heaven, for he causes the sun to rise on bad men as well as good and his rain to fall on honest and dishonest men alike.”<sup>322</sup>

†

Our King tells us to ask our Father to, “forgive us our debts, as we have forgiven those who are in debt to us. And do not put us to the test, but save us from the evil one.”<sup>323</sup>

†

Our Brother tells us, “if you forgive others their failings, your heavenly Father will forgive you yours; but if you do not forgive others, your Father will not forgive your failings either.”<sup>324</sup>

†

Jesus tells us, “I canceled all that debt of yours when you appealed to me. Were you not bound, then, to have pity on your fellow servant just as I had pity on you?”<sup>325</sup>

†

forgive your failings too.”<sup>327</sup>

†

Jesus tells us to, “Be compassionate as your Father is compassionate, grant pardon and you will be pardoned. Give and there will be gifts for you: a full measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap; because the amount you measure out is the amount you will be given back.”<sup>328</sup>

†

Our King tells us, “If your brother does something wrong, reprove him and, if he is sorry, forgive him. And if he wrongs you seven times a day and seven times comes back to you and says, ‘I’m sorry,’ you must forgive him.”<sup>329</sup>

†

And at the very end, giving up his life for us on the cross, Jesus said, “Father, forgive them; they do not know what they are doing.”<sup>330</sup>

### **21.2 Forgiving is everything.**

During our weekly retreats, we dealt with heartbreaks and forgiveness. Following are examples of severe heartbreaks. What they have in common, is that our dear Lord constantly forgives us when we do the very same thing to Him.

~

“My most bitter heartbreak was the betrayal I felt as a parent when my child committed an illegal act. I lost all trust in my child, and together, after forgiving him, had to go through a lengthy process of rebuilding that trust. A part of me died the day of the betrayal.”

-When was the last time I betrayed Jesus? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my betrayal and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“My heart was really broken when as a child I was always left behind because my parents did not want me to be with them.”

-When was the last time I left Jesus behind because I did not want Him to be with me? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat, and dirt, He saw my rejection and asked His Father to forgive me

ther to forgive me.

~  
 “One of the very deep hurts I experience, is when I feel ridiculed by my spouse or put down to the point that I don't want to share or express myself and be who Christ intends me to be. It makes for a barrier in communications and prevents one from growing.”

–When was the last time I ridiculed or put down my dear Lord? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my cruel heart and asked His Father to forgive me.

~  
 “My mother never trusted, never had faith in or believed in me. She always looked for and believed the worst.”

–When was the last time I put my faith and trust in our dear Lord? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my lack of trust and faith in Him and asked His Father to forgive me.

~  
 “My greatest heartbreak is when I see my two daughters who are unable to talk with each other. They are becoming strangers to each other in this family.”

–When was the last time I had a good talk with our dear Lord? Have I made Him a stranger in my life? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my silence and asked His Father to forgive me.

~  
 “Not forgiving his children for their weaknesses.”

–When was the last time I forgave myself for my weaknesses? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my unforgiving heart and asked His Father to forgive me.

~  
 “My father's refusal (through stubbornness) to speak to my spouse.”

–How many times did I refuse to speak to Jesus through stubbornness? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with

children.”

–Have I been unfaithful to our dear Lord? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my unfaithfulness and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“Break in communications with my spouse, put downs and actual physical and mental abuse.”

–Have I stopped communicating with my dear Lord who has never stopped loving me? Am I constantly blaming Him for things that go wrong in my life? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my hard heart and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“Being abused by anger and angry words.”

–Have I abused our dear Lord by being angry with Him? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my evil tongue and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“My husband always breaks my heart by arguing with me, always wanting to be right.”

–How many times have I wanted my dear Lord to agree with me? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my blindness and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“My spouse lies to me a lot, so I find it hard to believe him?”

–How many times have I been untruthful with our dear Lord. Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my lies to Him and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“My spouse and I don't really know each other well... we can't communicate with the barriers down. We are always busy because we don't know how to communicate with our hearts. We lack quality time with each other.”

–When was the last time I had some quality time with our dear Lord? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with

own lunch?”

“When I had a large tumor and it was quite possible I wasn't going to make it, they wondered, “how long would it take to remarry if you died?”

–Have I taken seriously the things that really hurt our dear Lord? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my insensitivity and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“Sexual rejection.”

–Have I rejected our dear Lord when He wanted to love me? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my repudiation of Him and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“I never get help around the house. I work! Work! Work!”

–How long has it been since I asked our dear Lord what I could do to help Him? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my indifference to the needs of others and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“I feel wounded and hurt because you are dying and I have never known you. You have time with the boys to play golf and to play cards... But, I want you, not things. I want to hear ‘I love you.’ But this is my fault too, because I am blocked and perhaps frightened to say, ‘I love you’ because of the tears that need to flow between us.”

–How many years have passed between our dear Lord and I since I told Him “I love you?” Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my insensibility and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

“Discovery of a wedge being driven between my spouse and myself and being unable to understand what the cause is or how to overcome it. Only seeing hurt and frustration on my spouse’s face.”

–When did I last ask our dear Lord what is keeping us apart?  
 Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat



-Have I taken this opportunity to confirm once again my trust in God and His Love for me? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my anxiety and want of confidence in His love for me and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

"I have been married four years. We have a wonderful little boy, I've raised him by myself because my husband is an alcoholic. He's never home. I love him very much, but he won't let me reach out to him. It hurts very much."

-When was the last time I let our dear Lord reach out to me and embrace me? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my absence from His heart and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

"When my husband left me for another woman."

-Have I left our dear Lord to give my heart to another person or thing? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my love for Him as second priority in my life and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

"Being from a broken home was most painful. My parent separated when I was a few months old. I never missed my father because I never knew him. However, I was always singled out at school and teased because of my parents separation. Whenever there were special events, I was hurt because we never attended them as a family. There were no family pictures- no family reunions- and when my sisters and I were married- no father."

-When was the last time I met with my spiritual family, my heavenly Father, Jesus my King, Holy Spirit faithful Friend, and Counselor, my dearest Mother Mary? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my estrangement from Heaven's Love and asked His Father to forgive me.

~

"When my mother died and I wanted to pray in my parish Church and found the door locked. This was one of my greatest hurts."

-How often did our dear Lord want to come into my heart only

~  
 “My grandchildren are not baptized. What to do?”

–Do I thank God for His loving concerns for each of us? Do I praise Him because he told us He would never abandon us? Long ago, hanging in pain from the cross, covered with blood, sweat and dirt, He saw my refusal to come to Him for help and asked His Father to forgive me.

~  
 Your Highness, now will you believe me when I say that 90% of us have hearts punctured with the bitter thorns of heartbreak? We must forgive those responsible as Jesus has forgiven us, “Father, forgive them, for they know naught what they do.”<sup>331</sup> We must also remember that neither are we without sin.<sup>332</sup> Your Highness, Jesus has made every effort to teach us we must forgive:

those who wrong us.<sup>333</sup>

those who fail us.<sup>334</sup>

anyone we have anything against.<sup>335</sup>

anyone who does something wrong and is sorry.<sup>336</sup>

those who do not know what they are doing.<sup>337</sup> and...

we must have pity on others.<sup>338</sup>

we must be compassionate like our Father.<sup>339</sup>

we must not judge and we will not be judged.<sup>340</sup>

we must not condemn.<sup>341</sup>

we must grant pardon.<sup>342</sup>

we must forgive them as often as they ask,<sup>343</sup> and

we must forgive without measure.<sup>344</sup>

### **21.3 Forgiving with royal generosity.**

Your Highness, it is abundantly clear that the need to manifest love through forgiveness is the heart of our life in the Body of Christ. Because God makes us in His image, forgiving in love is our royal heritage. Not to forgive with love and compassion is to be what we are not. As a priest in the Royal Priesthood of Jesus, your loving duty is to forgive the Other, with Jesus, from the cross. You receive the strength to do this from Jesus' Love for you, from the number of times Jesus has

---

forgiven you. We must forgive them as often as they ask,<sup>345</sup> and we must forgive without measure.<sup>346</sup>

When others hurt you because of circumstances over which you have no control, with Jesus, embrace the pillar, receive the lashes and forgive.

When you are hurt because of your beliefs and convictions, with Jesus, wear His crown of thorns and forgive.

When the road of life becomes too difficult to travel because of heartbreaks others have thrown onto you, share our dear Lord's cross on the Via Dolorosa and forgive.

When attacks from others are so severe as to completely overwhelm you, join your King on the cross and forgive.

Living these pains in Him, with Him and through Him, is to live your priesthood in Christ Jesus for the salvation of those you love. This single act in Christ Jesus— forgiving the Other— is the one that confirms your union with Him in perpetual love of the Other. Moreover your Highness, which one of us has not directly broken our dear Lord's heart in one or more of the ways described? Yet, He has forgiven us. He longs to forgive us. He wants to forget all of this and rejoice in your heart being with His again. There is no time in the Kingdom of God for heartbreak, only for reconciliation and rejoicing. Jesus loves you. Jesus yearns to be with you. Jesus has forgiven you for all the heartbreaks you have caused Him, directly or through others. Jesus longs to embrace you, to caress you in His Heart and protect you from any more pain in being separated from Him.

You should do likewise. You must do likewise. You are made in His image. It is normal for us to forgive. Not to forgive is to be what we are not, children of Darkness.

[If the Evil One ever has you so tightly in his grip that you are not able to be close to an Other, to forgive an Other— take your Bible and begin praising God by reading the Psalms. Do not stop until your hardened heart is made human again.]

You will never be who you are unless you do what your King asks:

*you must forgive others as often as they ask* <sup>347</sup>

you must grant pardon.<sup>352</sup>

you must give without measure.<sup>353</sup>

you must love one another as He has loved us.<sup>354</sup>

Your Highness, there is no greater power in the universe than the one you have received, to bring Christ's loving forgiveness, personally and historically, in time and in space to those who have hurt you and through you, have hurt Him.

Because you share in His Royal Priesthood, His forgiving heart beats through yours. His healing words are to be spoken through your lips. His healing hand strives to reach out through yours. His loving Heart yearns to embrace the Other through you.

As Monarch in the Kingdom of God, you are to be guided, consoled and sustained with the words given to you by our King who tells us, "Be compassionate as your Father is compassionate. Do not judge and you will not be judged yourselves; do not condemn and you will not be condemned yourselves; grant pardon and you will be pardoned. Give and there will be gifts for you: a full measure, pressed down, shaken together and running over, will be poured into your lap; because the amount you measure out is the amount you will be given back."<sup>355</sup>

#### **21.4 Example of forgiveness.**

I remember one beautiful moment on a Friday evening at the end of a retreat I had given. I invited those who attended the sessions to share their week with one and all.

A mother told us that three years ago an argument took place between her and her daughter, and because of this, her daughter left home. For three years, she and her separated young daughter did not speak a word to each other. Can you imagine how they and other members of the family suffered during those three long years? Can you imagine how each suffered at the dinner table, with that empty chair leaving so many unanswered questions? How they suffered on birthdays, at Christmas, on those other special family occasions. How the daughter suffered, alone at her dinner table, with empty chairs leaving so many questions unanswered.

On Thursday morning (after the Wednesday evening session on forgiving) she said she telephoned her daughter (she had moved away

“where Love is God is”) <sup>356</sup> He spoke and healed this broken relationship. A formidable barrier of stubborn pride and painful hurt on both sides simply dissolved under the power of His Love. Mother and daughter were reconciled and were in each other’s hearts and arms again. The family was together and whole again. Tears filled her eyes (and mine) in seeing the wondrous works the Lord God does from our hearts. It is the parent’s loving ministry, to bring Christ’s forgiveness to His children.

### **21.5 Rule of thumb in the Kingdom of God.**

Anything that brings about union in the Kingdom of God is good. Anything that causes separation or division in the Kingdom of God is bad.

### **21.6 The donut episode.**

I remember one occasion (among many) when Florence and I did some saber rattling. Afterwards (as usually happened), no one said a word. Florence went for a walk. When she returned, still in her overcoat (it was winter), she had a little brown paper bag in her hand. Extending her arm, she offered it to me. It was a donut from the donut shop. How beautiful she looked as she offered this opportunity for reconciliation. I opened the little brown bag and looked at that lonely donut, quietly lying there... waiting... wondering... Florence and I looked at each other and laughed and hugged and laughed and hugged. Then, we had a big party with our little donut.

Can you imagine how terrible it would have been had I said, “I’m not hungry?” or, “I don’t like that kind!” or “Keep your #&%@ donuts!”

In her desire for reconciliation, can you imagine what terrible cutting pains her heart would have further suffered getting a response from me like that? Can you imagine her heartbreak if she heard such animosities from the one she said, “Yes!” to in marriage? From the one she chose above all others? Can you imagine what confusion she would suffer, receiving new cutting verbal abuse from the one she gave her heart and one and only life to? Can you imagine how our heavenly Father would feel if He saw His son treating this gentle, loving heart like

brate. Our blessed lot in life is to rejoice and celebrate in being God's children. Rejoice and celebrate for He loves us and watches over us always. He will never, never, never let us be separated from Him through want of forgiveness.

### **21.7 Cutting heartbreak off at the pass.**

It is impossible for persons, at the time of their marriage, to know the other totally and completely. Indeed, they never will know the Other totally and completely.

One reason why there are so many heartbreaks in marriage, is because the, "Yes." to the other, the, "Yes." to love, the, "Yes." in the marriage vow, was not a "Yes." to the total other person. It was a "Yes." only to what was seen and to what was known of the Other.

Where Love and marriage are concerned, your "Yes." must be a conscious "Yes." to everything you see and know of the Other, and a conscious "Yes." to everything you do not know and do not see in the Other. Your "Yes." must be a "Yes." to the entire person the Other is, seen and not seen, known and not known, visible and invisible, present, past and future. All of these make up the Other to whom you are saying, "Yes." to. This is how our dear Lord loves us—warts and all. Surely Jesus has proven this.

Your Highness, was your "Yes." to your spouse a "Yes." to everything you see and do not see about him or her? Was your "Yes." to your spouse a "Yes." to everything you know and do not know about him or her? If not, then you must take the time to consciously reaffirm your loving "Yes." in this context. You may do it in private or with him (or her), but it must be done, with love and commitment and the sooner the better. Give your loving "Yes" to the whole person, the person you know and do not know, the person you see and do not see, a "Yes." to his or her past, present and future. With such a "Yes." your heart will yearn to discover, to meet, to love and to care for this singular, unique Heart, each and every day for the rest of your sweet lives, together.

### **21.8 Love is all that counts.**

Once a very dear friend of mine was hospitalized with an in-

monitors and other machines, attached to lines and tubes, he was at the end of his rope. It was heartbreaking to see this former navy commander at the mercy of a microscopic germ that had rendered him powerless.

As I was helping him prepare to receive our dear Lord, his eyes focused into eternity and he said to me (and to himself), “Raymond, the only thing that matters in this life is love.” After he received the Eucharist, I embraced him and left.

Eventually the medical team found the cause of his illness. A type of bacteria (normally found in cows) had infected his heart. He recovered completely and returned home. His words, however, echoed the one and only law there is in the Kingdom of God. Jesus tells us what it is, when the Pharisees put this question to Him:

“Master, which is the greatest commandment of the Law?” Jesus said, ‘You must love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the greatest and the first commandment. The second resembles it: You must love your neighbour as yourself. On these two commandments hang the whole Law and the Prophets also.’”<sup>357</sup>

“Raymond, the only thing that matters in this life is love.”

### **21.9 Hugging a corpse.**

Once, while on duty in pastoral care at the hospital, a man who had a heart attack was brought into the emergency unit. He died within a few minutes. After the nurses removed the equipment, I brought the family into the cubicle, where we lived the reality of the moment. As the family was leaving, I saw that one son had a particularly difficult time dealing with this event. I asked that he stay with me, telling him he would join the family later. With God's eyes, I saw that he and his father were not as close as he would have liked, and now he did not know what to do.

I said to him, “Name, this will be the last chance you have to embrace your father, why don't you do that and tell him how much you love him?” He threw himself on his father's bare, cold, lifeless chest, put his arms around him, embraced him and cried and cried and cried. Rivers of tears flowed from those youthful eyes. I thanked God for lib-

ground, dead. One minute this family was together, laughing and enjoying the beautiful morning sun, picking berries; the next, they're in the hospital emergency ward with a son in full splendor of youth, lying dead on a hospital bed. Were there things said that morning that should not have been said? Were there hearts that were broken that were not healed? Were there kisses and hugs that should have been given that were needlessly put off?

“Raymond, the only thing that matters in this life is love.”

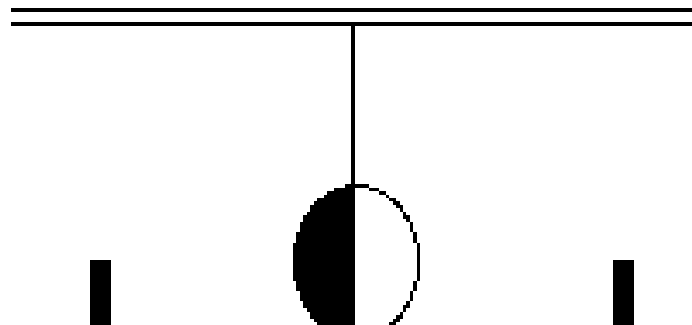
Your Highness, today is the only day you have. It's a day to love, a day to forgive, a day to heal and a day to welcome those who are dear and precious to you. It's a day to tell them so. This is the power given to you from God. Do not let Satan's murdering pride use the so-called arguments of right and wrong, ruthlessly cut and cripple that fragile human heart God has placed next to you. If you harm this precious heart, one day you will have to explain your actions to your heavenly Father.

How many words will you need to explain to God your rules on right and wrong? Eternity will not be long enough to make your case. Our dear Lord taught us the only two words we need to know– Love and Forgive.

“Raymond, the only thing that matters in this life is love.”

### **21.11 How to prevent conflict.**

Want to prevent conflict? Try and see the other person's point of view. In this drawing, we see a table, two chairs and a sphere suspended from the ceiling.





“Gerry, I'm not blind. Do you need glasses?”

Soon there is a terrible argument.

The tragedy, is they are both right. How can two persons get into such hostilities when they are both right?

Here is what should have happened.

“Say Helen, that's a lovely white sphere.”

“Yes, it is a lovely sphere, Gerry, but it's not white, it's black.”

“Black? I see a white sphere. Hold on a minute Helen, I'll have a look from your end of the table. By golly, you're right. Your half *IS* black, but my half is white. Come and see for yourself.”

Helen goes to Gerry's end of the table, “Well I'll be! Your half *IS* white. This is a sphere where one half is white and one half is black. Well, look at that...”

What happened? One person got up and went to see what the other person saw, to look at things from the Other's point of view. Because of this, now they both see the truth. The sphere is neither white nor black, but half white and half black.

It is the Truth that keeps hearts together.

### **21.12 Two's a crowd, three's company.**

There are also situations where, because of personalities or chemistry, some individuals simply cannot meet without there being a conflict or the potential for a conflict. A way for them to avoid potential conflict is to introduce a third presence to their meetings.

When I was city administrator, certain persons came to my office with a chip on their shoulder. To diffuse potential conflicts, I would leave my side of the desk, sit with them on “their side” and write the problem down on paper or on the blackboard. Then, instead of each of us looking at each other (as though the other was the problem), we would look at the problem now on paper or on the blackboard. The problem was now “out there” and *we could look at it together*.

This went a long way in avoiding potential friction and conflict. Further, our vision was no longer clouded with a sense of being threatened by the other. The problem itself became much clearer to see and, consequently, much easier to resolve.

*Our efforts (now a team effort) were directed to solving the*

would just listen to her, then say, "Ok., Bye." then hang up. She (the daughter) would then get upset and angry with her mother because she wouldn't talk with her.

Some persons (because of childhood or other experiences) are not able to get emotionally involved live, face to face or voice to voice. Because of this, they cannot interact quickly enough. I advised her not to telephone her mother but to write to her instead. Let her have the time she needs to read your words and "listen" to you. Let her receive your love through the written word, when she is alone and can take the time needed to "listen" to you. She will be better prepared to receive your love, without the fear of being forced to return her love to you immediately when she is loved live over the telephone. Eventually, she will write back. In due time they will enjoy each other's company face to face, hug to hug, heart to heart, live.

#### **21.14 The bottom line.**

Your Highness, as God's children forgiving is supposed to be what we do best. Little children have no problems with forgiving and reconciliation. Almost immediately the transgression is forgotten... we must be childlike. Children have no taste or time for revenge or grudges. Children forgive almost instantly. We are not supposed to excel at anything else. All our diplomas and certificates are supposed to be in forgiving. Our joy in forgiving and in reconciling ourselves with one another is what identifies us as members of the Body of Christ. We can be ignorant and foolish in many things, but forgiveness is not one of them. Your heavenly Father expects you to be the greatest forgiver the world has ever seen. When you go before your heavenly Father, He must recognize you as His son, as His daughter, by all the medals of forgiveness you carry on your heart.

Whether you are celibate, married or ordained, it is impossible to live any ministry without a loving, forgiving heart in Christ Jesus. "By this love you have for one another, everyone will know that you are my disciples."<sup>358</sup> Persons in the ministry of marriage receive special powers where love and forgiveness are concerned.

Assure peace and God's happiness in your life by loving and forgiving one another and liberate yourself and your loved ones from

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 22.

### Heartbroken Lambs.

#### 22.1 The experiment.

On Wednesday evenings (during the retreats), I often carried out the following experiment. How would you have responded? Those in attendance would gather 'round a small table on which I had placed the cuddliest little stuffed lamb you ever saw. It had a lovely knitted blanket on its back. I explained my dilemma to the group.

“This poor little lamb has been standing like this for days. It won't eat or drink. It will not come to me when I call it. It makes no sound. What am I to do?”

Each person in the group was to write down his or her answer on a piece of paper, fold it and give it to me. If you wish you can write your answer as well. Do it now— before reading on. I would take all the answers, mix them up so that no one knew who wrote what, and then I would read them aloud one by one.

“Gently lift it up into your arms.”

“Bring some water to it and place it in front of its mouth.”

“Tie a rope around its neck and pull it.”

“Open its mouth and force feed it.”

“Leave it there. When it's hungry enough— it will come.”

“Hit it with a stick, gently.”

“Your answer, \_\_\_\_\_.”

What has constantly amazed me, in the many years I gave these conferences, no one has ever asked:

“Why does it have a blanket on its back?”

When the group finally focused on the blanket, I removed it from the lamb. Underneath, we saw long strands of barbed wire wrapped around its body. It was bleeding at all those points where the barbs punctured the skin. This poor little creature could not move, even if it wanted to. Now let's look at those answers again:

“Gently lift it up into your arms.”

some of life's painful and traumatic experiences, and the blanket symbolizes what people do to hide these experiences from others. Remember, persons in the group were not able to see the lamb's pains because they failed to see how it masked or covered them up, to hide them. They failed in seeing how the pains were covered up because they did not see what they were looking at.

Where are these suffering lambs? Everywhere. Your spouse may be one. Your child may be one. Your parent may be one. Your pastor may be one. They are everywhere. And each person has his or her own "blanket" (if you look you will see it) that he or she uses to cover the painful experiences, inflicted on them by others. The only time a person with that much pain will confide in you, is when that person hears Christ's voice coming from your mouth. "My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me."<sup>359</sup>

### **22.2 The bottom line.**

Whether it is your spouse or your children or anyone else, never, never, never force anyone to do something he or she does not or cannot do, for you do not know what bitter painful experiences his or her heart is wrapped in. You should know by now that forcing others to do things against their will is not a prompt that comes from the Holy Spirit. Learn how to speak to others with our dear Lord's voice, a voice of love and compassion, understanding and mercy, a voice of life, healing and resurrection, the voice of the good Shepherd.

*Marriage in the Kingdom.*

*Part Three*

*Discernment.*

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 23.

### Seeing the Presence of Jesus in Others.

#### 23.1 Where Love is, God is.

Your Highness, looking at a finished diamond, we see that it begins at a point (from nothing) and blossoms into many facets. Although each facet is similarly shaped, each brings into the world a different sparkle, a different light and a different color. Each is a different and unique expression of the diamond's total splendor, yet all are part and parcel of the same diamond. Collectively, they reveal the diamond's beauty and are what give it its value. Humanity is much the same. Jesus is the Diamond and we are the Facets. "Through him all things came to be, not one thing had its being but through him. All that came to be had life in him."<sup>360</sup>

Like the facets of a diamond, each of us is a unique revelation of God. We all have the same name (Jesus) but each of us spell it differently:

How do you spell Jesus? F-l-o-r-e-n-c-e.

How do you spell Jesus? R-a-y-m-o-n-d.

How do you spell Jesus? E-l-i-z-a-b-e-t-h.

How do you spell Jesus? L-e-w-i-s.

How do you spell Jesus? P-a-t-r-i-c-i-a.

How do you spell Jesus? M-a-r-c.

How do you spell Jesus? C-a-r-o-l-i-n-e.

How do you spell Jesus? G-r-e-g-o-r-y.

How do you spell Jesus? S-o-p-h-i-a.

How do you spell Jesus? D-a-v-i-d.

This is why each of us is so special and so precious to our heavenly Father. Essentially, we all have the same shape. We all look alike. Each of us is also a part of the Body of Christ Jesus, for "not one thing had its being but through him." We each bring into the world a rare sparkle, a unique light, a personal color and a one-of-a-kind expression of our common Personhood— Jesus. As each facet reveals a

who now love you. Look at those persons who share with you. Look at those persons who sustain you. Look at these Holy Facets of the divine Diamond. Look into their eyes. Look upon their countenance. See the visible signs of their loving concern for you... see the visible signs of Jesus' loving concern for you. The Love you are receiving is from God for, "God is love."<sup>363</sup>

### **23.2 Presence of Jesus (Love) in the Other.**

Once I was working as a consultant in a municipality a few miles from home. As I was leaving, the person I was working with said to me, "Raymond, be careful driving back home. I heard over the radio that because of freezing rain the highways are slippery and treacherous." His simple message of caution and concern for me was nothing less than Jesus' words of loving concern for my welfare. In this person's voice I heard the voice of Love, the voice of Jesus because "God is love."<sup>364</sup> I thanked him (and through him our dear Lord) for his words of caution. Again I rejoiced at how close our God is and how He cares for us, "I will live in your midst."<sup>365</sup>

### **23.3 Presence of Jesus (Love) in the Other.**

One day while watching television, Florence asked me if I would like a cup of tea.

"Sure," I replied.

A few minutes later she came with the tea, special fancy cup and all. On the side of the gold-rimmed saucer was the largest, reddest, sweetest strawberry I ever saw. I looked at the fancy cup and saucer. I saw the glorious strawberry. Here was another of Florence's loving experiences in sharing (another of God's loving experiences in sharing). From all the strawberries in His creation, the most beautiful was chosen and put on my saucer. This was a surprise to delight me and, another sign of her Love (of God's love) for me, because where Love is, God is, for "God is love." I thanked Florence and through her, our heavenly Father for spoiling me like they do. "I will live in your midst."

Your Highness, I have singled out two very ordinary events (if one can call such events *ordinary*). It is through such daily interven-

At times these will be simple loving gestures and at other times they will be very personal, intimate, deeply loving embraces. At other times they will be major interventions (operations, teachings, advice, etc.). He loves us a thousand times a day in a thousand different ways. But if you do not see these visible signs of Love, how will you ever see the face of Love— Jesus?

Remember, the visible is always a sign of the invisible, Love is always a sign of God's presence so... Love is holy, Love is sacred and Love is spiritual. "It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer."<sup>367</sup>

Every day, your Highness, you receive hundreds and hundreds of loving experiences— the simple fact of being alive, things others do to care for you, to watch over you. These are all signs of God's Love for you, manifested in all the ways required to sustain you. For each of these, with a childlike heart, you must (in joy and in delight) continuously respond in one lifelong hymn of praise and thanksgiving:

"Thank you Jesus."

"Dear Lord, you are truly wonderful."

"What a delightful surprise, my King."

"Blessed is thy holy name, dearest Jesus."

"Thank you for this loving reminder, dearest Holy Spirit."

Or, simply embrace Him in your heart the same way a child embraces his father or mother and never never let Him go. Remember, when each person brings you Love, you should embrace Christ (the Other) in return, for God is Love.

Your Highness, soon you will be in total awe over everything Jesus has done for you. Day by day, His countless and countless and countless manifestations of His Love for you will overwhelm you. Whether you receive a simple glass of water, a beautiful angelic smile from your newborn baby or a loving embrace from your beloved, you soon realize you simply cannot receive so much Love without responding. His Love for you is so personal, so intimate, so bountiful, so overwhelming and so life-giving, you must respond. Eventually, your response to our dear Lord will be a total emphatic "Yes!" a final submission, for no one can love you like He does. If you knew how much God loves you— how He loves you every instant of every day— how He em-



regarded, received with cold indifference, wasted— if you could see how many times we have been an obstacle preventing His love from embracing another, eternity would not be long enough to cry our contrition, our self-reproach and repentance.

#### **23.4 Love, must Love.**

The Lord replied, “What sort of steward, then, is faithful and wise enough for the master to place him over his household to give them their allowance of food at the proper time? Happy that servant if his master's arrival finds him at this employment. I tell you truly, he will place him over everything he owns. But as for the servant who says to himself, ‘My master is taking his time coming’ and sets about beating the menservants and the maids and eating and drinking and getting drunk, his master will come on a day he does not expect and at an hour he does not know. The master will cut him off and send him to the same fate as the unfaithful.”<sup>369</sup>

Your Highness, what we should be doing when our King arrives is to be giving the members of His household (our brothers and sisters) the food they need to survive, His love.

#### **23.5 Love is more important than health.**

“When you have your health, you have everything,” is an expression we often hear. I would like to give you a new one which I think is far closer to the truth: When you know how much God loves you, you have everything. “Your love is better than life itself, my lips will recite your praise; all my life I will bless you, in your name lift up my hands; my soul will feast more richly, on my lips a song of joy and, in my mouth, praise.”<sup>370</sup>

Not seeing God's love for us through Others means not seeing the face of Jesus in our life each day.

Not seeing God's love for us through Others means not rejoicing in His gift of Life, not nourished by His Love.

Not seeing God's love for us through Others means not being able to receive God's Love into our hearts.

Not seeing God's love for us through Others means not being aware of what Heaven is doing for you, how Heaven is concerned for

will turn into a spring inside him, welling up to eternal life.”<sup>372</sup> The water He is offering you and me, is His Love.

Since we are all members of the same Body of Christ (Facets on the same Diamond), our Love for one another is nothing less than God's Love for Himself, the Holy Spirit in action. Your life is completely immersed in the-life-giving Love of God, like a fish is immersed in the life-giving water that sustains it.

[When you see Jesus... you see God. We, as unbelievable as it may sound, are nothing less than the sacrament of encounter with Jesus. When you see an Other, when an Other sees you, with all that Heaven has given us, you see Christ.]

This is why our King tells us, “When the Son of Man comes in his glory, escorted by all the angels, then he will take his seat on his throne of glory. All the nations will be assembled before him and he will separate one from another as the shepherd separates sheep from goats. He will place the sheep on his right hand and the goats on his left. Then the King will say to those on his right hand, ‘Come, you whom my Father has blessed, take for your heritage the kingdom prepared for you since the foundation of the world. For I was hungry and you gave me food; I was thirsty and you gave me drink; I was a stranger and you made me welcome; naked and you clothed me, sick and you visited me, in prison and you came to see me.’

Then the virtuous will say to him in reply, ‘Lord, when did we see you hungry and feed you; or thirsty and give you drink? When did we see you a stranger and make you welcome; naked and clothe you; sick or in prison and go to see you?’ And the King will answer, ‘I tell you solemnly, in so far as you did this to one of the least of the brothers of mine, you did it for me.’”<sup>373</sup>

### **23.6 The bottom line.**

“My commandment is this, that you love one another as I have loved you. By this love you have for one another, the world will know you are my disciples.”<sup>374</sup>

Each time you receive a sign of love, a helping hand, a smile, words of encouragement and so on, look into the eyes of the Other and say “Thank You (name) ” In your heart thank Jesus who is present in

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 24.**

### **Grace as a Condition for Discernment.**

#### **24.1 We must be part of the Vine.**

Jesus tells us, "As a branch cannot bear fruit all by itself, but must remain part of the vine, neither can you unless you remain in me. I am the vine, you are the branches. Whoever remains in me, with me in him, bears fruit in plenty; for cut off from me you can do nothing."<sup>376</sup>

These words from our dear Lord say it all. Your Highness, Jesus is the vine and we are the branches. Through Him, with Him and in Him, His grace enables us to radiate His Presence through our own unique fragrance and color, revealing His Life, His Love and His presence. If we say no to Jesus' life-giving Love, like the rebellious flower, WE MUST DIE since we are not the source of our life, we are not our first cause.

Every time we sin because of the so-called rights we think are ours, we suppress His grace a little more, a grace that we need to live, to blossom and bloom. The lily died when it was no longer a part of the life-giving plant. When grace no longer has access to our heart, like a branch that is no longer part of the vine, we too must die. All life comes from God.

Dearest Friend, live who you are to the fullest as a fruit-bearing branch on the divine Vine. You are the first and the last. There is no other and there never will be another like you. You have been blessed in giving a special presence to the face of God for a lifetime.

For some Monarchs, living as a branch on the divine Vine (in a state of grace) is a natural enough way of life. This is how they were raised by their parents in their Kingdoms. When they ascended to the throne (when they took power in their corner of the Kingdom as God's Child), they simply carried on like their royal parents did, as new branches on the Sacred Vine.

Other Monarchs, however, are branches on the divine Vine only by a special grace from God. Once, like the lily, they considered looking

their own vine. They allowed harmful pride, logic and selfishness to restrict the flow of Life from the Vine to them and they died. They lost the ability to produce fruit and, like the lily, are now a black, smelly mass, a home for maggots in the dirt below.

### **24.2 A branch on the Vine again.**

A person who yearns to become a branch full of Life on this Holy Vine, will begin by taking the time needed to have a good look around him, to see all that his King has done for him from the first days of creation to this very moment as Love is now reaching out to him.

He must open his eyes. He must look and see all the visible signs of Jesus' love for him. He must open his ears. He must listen and hear all the audible sounds of Jesus' love for him. If he does not look and see, listen and hear, he will never meet Love, Jesus his King. Then, as he realizes that he is still a part of this sweet Life-giving Vine, and with repentance for having said no to His love, he will embrace Jesus with all his heart, all his soul and all his mind. He will receive once again the fullness of His Life-giving Love, never, never, never to leave Him again.

### **24.3 How I was nursed back onto the Vine.**

Half way into my career as city administrator, a consulting firm offered me a similar position with a larger city in Southern Ontario. I had difficulty in deciding what I should do. It takes about seven years to diagnose, assess, plan and put the necessary machinery in place and into motion to turn a city around. After that, the task is mostly monitoring and fine tuning. I asked myself, "After this reorganization, what would I do next? Go to another city and undertake another reorganization? Another seven years? Then what? A lifetime will have come and gone, and for what?" I felt that my life was more important than simply reorganizing cities and towns, cities which will eventually turn to dust like the pyramids (for many this is happening now).

I was awakening to the reality that if hearts do not change, cities will not change. Yet cities must change if they are to be healthy, life-sustaining nests for us to grow in. Therefore, hearts must change. I kept trying to find reasons why I shouldn't go, but what I was really

the terrifying sensation that I was going to die. I saw myself falling deeper and deeper into a dark abyss. Repeatedly, I cried out for help. I remember having the sensation of sinking in a black ocean. I no longer had a "life jacket" supporting me. I was plunging deeper and deeper into the darkness. In response to my cries, a nurse ran to my bedside but was unable to comfort me.

Still very much alone, in the infirmary, I suddenly became conscious of the presence of another Person within me. I felt that I had lived in this house (my body) all these years, always believing I was alone. Now I was conscious that someone else was within me, and that person was with me every day since I have been on this earth. I was shocked and completely overwhelmed.

Then, with ever so much grace, courtesy and gentleness, this person spoke to me (there was no sound but I heard the words), and invited me to look at my hands, which I then saw as large and empty... very large and very empty. I saw my life as always taking and never giving, despite all the love given to me over the years. A love that gave me life, parents, friends, teachers, nurses, all who cared for me. A love that blessed me with creation, dearest Florence, our beautiful children, a home, health, and employment. A love that once saved me from drowning and saved me again from being killed in a car accident. On many other occasions, my soul was saved from taking liberties with others, liberties I had no right to take though they were freely offered to me.

On and on, I saw these wonderful salutary interventions of love in my life. After receiving all this love, I realized my hands were empty where thanksgiving and reciprocation were concerned. Indeed, if anything, while trying to be successful and find happiness on my own, slowly but surely, I was killing myself through work. I was not being reproached, or even reprimanded, but was simply made to see what was happening, what I was doing with my life. Like the lily, I too was unmindful of this Life-giving Love and the many blessings showered on me. I was looking for my happiness in my own flower pot, one that I was going to make myself. Then, the paramedics came.

On our way to the hospital, they questioned me as to my address, telephone number and so on. During this time, I was convinced I

notes. Everything had a dimension of newness to it. That night I did not sleep one wink. I was totally captivated by what happened.

The next day, I met with the consultant and the councillor for my final interview. Because of what happened the day before, I was still in a daze. These wonderful persons did not know what to make of the situation. Under the circumstances, they wisely brought the interview to a close. I should have told them what happened, but did not know what was going on. I was not invited to apply for the position.

Returning home to Ottawa, I immediately arranged for a complete medical examination, especially of the brain. I wanted to know what happened. Eventually, I was told there was nothing wrong with me. However, the sensations of dying returned again and again. They became so terrifying that I ended up being referred to a psychiatrist who diagnosed my condition as having anxiety attacks. Looking back, I believe that I had a faith crisis. Perhaps a faith crisis and an anxiety attack are two sides (spiritual and psychological) of the same coin. After awhile the anxiety attacks were gone— I was cured; however, the experience in the department store first aid room remained with me.

“Who was this person within me?”

“How is it he knows me so well?”

“How could he communicate so much information to me instantly?”

“What kind of a world am I really living in?”

“What happened?”

“Who am I?”

My new awareness of all the love given to me over the years and seeing my empty hands also stayed with me. I had a question to answer. Even after three years, the presence was still so strong that I had to deal with a question that had to be answered. I had two choices, either this was all in my imagination or this was indeed a real Person waiting for an answer from me.

I know that love is personal. One may win a lottery or a draw, but the event is not one of love— simply sheer chance. Love however, is personal, not chance. Love followed me everywhere during my short lifetime, bringing good things into my life, tailor-fitted for me, for my happiness and welfare. What was I going to do in the face of so much

me from you and will never choose to pursue such again. I see that in You alone is my well being, my security, my happiness and my hope for survival. Your Love for me is a love you have proven over and over and over again for so many years.”

Looking back, I realized that was when the Royal Gardener nursed me back onto the Vine. Like the lily, I was probably very close to breaking away from It. Like the lily, my notion of what happiness and success should be, was one big illusion, taught to me by the movies, television and others who were deceived. With His Life-giving energy and vigor, God reawakened me to His never-ending presence in my life. I was now relishing the joy of knowing I was once again a branch on the Divine Vine. I had to re-educate myself on how to live, how to work, how to see, how to speak... how to do everything.

[I had to learn how to pray, but I did not know whom to pray to. God. God? Who is God? Later, with the loving assistance of my spiritual director (a healthy branch next to me on this Holy Vine), I overcame this difficulty. I also read the lives of the saints (drawing on the Life of other branches from other parts of the Vine). Many went through what I was going through and I wanted to learn from them how they handled themselves. How fortunate we are to have these loving brothers and sisters to help us along our way, especially our brother Saint Augustine.]

Since this executive no longer knew the rules of the game, my next step was to go to the parish priest and get directions from him. My reasoning at the time was this: ‘I now know that God is a real Person. I am conscious of His presence in me.’ I heard Him talk to me. He dwells within me. Therefore, Jesus must also be real, and is very probably His Son. If Jesus is a real person, then His Church must also be real. I should go there for direction.

My parish priest listened very attentively as I explained what happened. He then suggested that I ask the bishop to become a permanent deacon. I did. The next part of my journey is described in

but surely, Life began anew on the Sacred Vine. Slowly but surely, I left the world to be raised in the Kingdom of God. One day many years later, I saw I no longer had anything in common with the world I once embraced so fiercely. Life, now, is on the Vine in the Vineyard, nourished by our Father's Love, basking in the Sun (Jesus' companionship) and caressed by the gentle Breeze (Holy Spirit).

Jesus tells us, "As a branch cannot bear fruit all by itself, but must remain part of the vine, neither can you unless you remain in me. I am the vine, you are the branches. Whoever remains in me, with me in him, bears fruit in plenty; for cut off from me you can do nothing."<sup>379</sup>

Your Highness, once you realize how much you are loved by Jesus and what He has done for you:

-with a heart full of humility (which is only fitting that you, the creature, have before God your loving Creator), "... love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."<sup>380</sup>

-with a heart full of good intentions (wanting to be your heavenly Father's loving child again though you may not yet know how), "... love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."<sup>381</sup>

-with a heart illuminated by faith, full of trust in Jesus your King (though you may not yet know Him), "... love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."<sup>382</sup>

-with a heart eager to accept God's salutary love, a heart that will beat "Yes." in response to each of His loving, inviting embraces, "... love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."<sup>383</sup>

-with a heart willing to give God the adoration due to Him, for God is God and man is man, "... love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."<sup>384</sup>

-with a heart disposed to being a healthy Branch bursting with Life on this most Sacred Vine, to being One with Jesus in whose image He made you (though you do not know where all of this will finally bring you), "... love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."<sup>385</sup>

Like your heavenly Mother Mary, say; "I am the handmaid of the Lord. Let what you have said be done to me."<sup>386</sup>



Like Mary Magdalene, with tears and a contrite heart, wash his feet, cover them with your kisses in thanksgiving and anoint them with the consecration of your service to Him.<sup>388</sup>

With your brother Thomas say, "My Lord and my God."<sup>389</sup>

With your dear brother Paul say, "I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who has given me strength, and who judged me faithful enough to call me into his service, even though I used to be a blasphemer and did all I could to injure and discredit the faith."<sup>390</sup>

With your brother Augustine say, "You have made us to be toward you Lord, and our heart is restless until it rests in you."<sup>391</sup>

You cannot be in better company, your Highness.

Jesus tells us, "I am the true vine, and my Father is the vine-dresser. Every branch in me that bears no fruit he cuts away, and every branch that does bear fruit he prunes to make it bear even more. You are pruned already, by means of the word that I have spoken to you. Make your home in me as I make mine in you. As a branch cannot bear fruit all by itself, but remain part of the vine, whoever remains in me, with me in him, bears fruit in plenty; for cut off from me you can do nothing. Anyone who does not remain in me is like a branch that has been thrown away -he withers; these branches are collected and thrown on the fire, and they are burnt. If you remain in me and my words remain in you, you may ask what you will and you shall get it. It is to the glory of my Father that you should bear much fruit, and then you will be my disciples."<sup>392</sup>

#### **24.4 The bottom line.**

Your Highness, you will never know real peace, real happiness, real joy, real consolation, real humility and real power in Christ Jesus, unless you live, bloom and blossom as a branch on this sacred Vine. If you are not now a fruitful branch on this holy Vine, you know what to do. If not, contact your parish priest or another close branch on the Vine. If this is not possible, write to me.

Your Highness, it is to the glory of your heavenly Father that you and your loved ones should bear much fruit.<sup>393</sup>

God bless you.

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 25.**

### **Discernment.**

#### **25.1 When to say, “Yes!” and when to say, “No!”**

Your Highness, as a Branch on the Divine Vine, you now have the vantage point needed to effectively scan the horizons of the Kingdom of God.

Because of the action of the Holy Spirit within you, your vision is now ever conscious of the presence of Jesus, your King, and your heavenly Father in your life. As a branch destined to bring much fruit on the sacred Vine, you will now witness and share with Jesus. But to reign as Monarch in the Kingdom of God, to bring forth much fruit, you must know how to discern. You must know what counsels (prompts) come from the Holy Spirit, and what counsels come from the enemy, Satan. Our brother John warns us, “It is not every spirit my dear people, that you can trust; test them, to see if they come from God, there are many false prophets now in the world.”<sup>394</sup>

As a Monarch in the Kingdom of God, you must be able to recognize those prompts that are from the Holy Spirit. Guided by them, you will fulfil your royal duties in making creation anew for God's greater glory. Prompts that you discern as not being from the Holy Spirit, you will exile from His Kingdom. Your will is your sword, your determination, your strength, which, by the grace of God, you will do this.

In this exercise, your Highness, discerning means discerning decisions that relate to Kingdom values and choices. These will impact on the direction your life will take in making the Kingdom of God visible, and do not relate to decisions of a routine or mundane nature. These latter will be influenced by the former.

Reigning in communion with the Blessed Trinity, your Highness, means actively participating in the Divine decision-making process. You will sit at the same table with the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. Together, you will share loving concerns for the welfare and

hurrying you to reply, when you do not have the freedom to say, “No.” the prompt is not from the Holy Spirit. When you are cornered and the only way out is to say, “Yes”. then it is certain this pressure is not from the Holy Spirit. Exile all such prompts from the Kingdom. Jesus tells us that “...if the Son makes you free, you will be free indeed.”<sup>396</sup>

### **25.3 Voice of Holy Spirit is gentle.**

When the Holy Spirit speaks to you, your Highness, His prompts are quiet, peaceful loving counsels, refreshing, like a very light breeze. “Then Yahweh himself went by. There came a mighty wind, so strong it tore the mountains and shattered the rocks before Yahweh. But Yahweh was not in the wind. After the wind came an earthquake. But Yahweh was not in the earthquake. After the earthquake came a fire. But Yahweh was not in the fire. And after the fire, there came the sound of a gentle breeze. And Elijah heard this, he covered his face with his cloak and went out and stood at the entrance of the cave. Then a voice came to him.”<sup>397</sup>

### **25.4 An experience with a Breeze.**

May I share an experience with you that I once had with a “breeze?” At my ordination, I was sitting on a beautiful ornate wooden chair in the basilica sanctuary. The tabernacle was at my left, the altar ahead and the congregation at my right. During the homily, I found myself suddenly confronted with questions like these:

“What was I doing here?”

“Don't these people know who I really am?”

“Don't they know I shouldn't be here?”

“Don't they know how wicked I really am?”

“What kind of a hypocrite am I?”

“Where do I get the nerve to do such terrible things?”

“How can I deceive others like this?”

Such similar terrible thoughts stormed my mind and overwhelmed me. My presence there seemed Satanically sacrilegious. I was terrified. I felt hot, flushed and very ill with a sickening high fever. The heat around me was sweltering. I was suffocating— like being in a locked car on a concrete parking lot at high noon in July. I was nau-

the city.”

I felt wet and clammy and must have been very pale. Now there was no doubt in my mind I was going to faint. I gave a quick glance at the altar. The archbishop seemed so very far away. The whole scene was like a dream, without sound. Too weak to do anything, I faced the inevitable. From the corner of my eye, I had a closer look at my surroundings. Where could I fall? There were elegantly carved wooden pews, marble steps and furniture all around me. I feared hitting my head on an edge or a sharp point. I no longer had any hope of surviving this situation and was completely powerless in face of the event now overtaking me.

Just as I was to slip into the darkness, just as my eyes were closing— the most delightful breeze I have ever experienced, revitalized me to the very depth of my being. The recovery took place in an instant. Although luxuriously frail, It was decidedly autonomous and self-sufficient. It was so full of the excitement of life in conception It had difficulty containing itself.

From the corner of my eye, I saw it coming. It *appeared* as a delicate silk cloth of the purest white material, embroidered with fine, luxurious silver threads. Its size *appeared* a little smaller than a handkerchief.

It shimmered ever so gently as It came at me from my left side (the tabernacle side). It then passed through my head, all of which seemed perfectly normal. It felt extraordinarily refreshing and ever so comfortably cool, without being cold or wet.

It was like that wonderful morning breeze, nudged across the lake by the warm rays of the rising sun and gently kissing our cheeks.

Years later I was dumbfounded (and overjoyed) when I heard Daniel 3:49-50 being read at a Lenten service: “But the angel of the Lord came down into the furnace beside Azariah and his companions; he drove the flames of the fire outwards, and fanned into them, in the heart of the furnace, a coolness such as a wind or dew will bring, so that the fire did not even touch them or cause them any pain or distress.” Amen!

As It went through me, I felt every impurity in me completely disappear. I experienced a feeling of complete newness, as if I was just

left my chair to approach the archbishop for my ordination, there was no longer any question or doubt of the propriety of my being there. I knew that I was there because it was by the authority of He who makes such decisions. Everything that God did to bring me to this moment in time and in eternity filled me with awe and wonder.

~

Since Yahweh's voice is as quiet and gentle as a breeze,<sup>398</sup> to hear Him, the Monarch must live in peace and serenity. God does not scream.

There are times when a prompt sounds like a person speaking.

There are times when a prompt is a clearly seen plan of action.

There are times when a prompt takes the form of an interior vision rather than "verbal" instructions.

There are also times when an inspiration (with all of its implications) gives you instant and total understanding of the situation.

The hallmark of an inspiration from the Holy Spirit is knowledge and certainty accompanied with a very deep Peace.

Your Highness, to properly discern as Monarch, you will need to reawaken your listening skills. This is especially true at the beginning of your reign when experience is lacking and one's soul may not yet be properly disposed. You must know how to distinguish the Voice of the Vine from voices that are not from the Vine. Failing to do this, will mean a great deal of turmoil, confusion, disorder and chaos in your life. You will be pleased to know that there are many persons committed to restoring creation for God's greater glory. Others, however, have powerful vested interests in either leaving things the way they are, or in governing for their personal and selfish ambitions.

### **25.5 Priorities and responsibilities in the Castle.**<sup>399</sup>

When I first began my ministry as a permanent deacon, I was soon putting in 35 hours a week in parish activities. I was also putting in 35 hours a week on my job. It was getting to the point where I was scheduling flights from business meetings to dovetail with parish visits. Things were getting out of hand. My health, Florence, the children and work were all getting short changed. My ministry had become a monster. I could never feed it enough. That is when I stopped to dis-



“I would like to be loved with an honest caring from others. I like to feel that I’m special. I like others to do things for me voluntarily. I like to be touched. I like being respected and others communicating with me.”

~

“I would like to be loved for the person that I am.”

~

“I would like to be loved for the person that I am. I don’t like being what others want me to be. I want to be myself. I do not want to be loved for my material possessions, but because I’m rich in human values. I would like to be loved with an honest love, and if at times I hurt others, I would like to be told so. I would like to be loved so that I can feel this love inside of me.”

~

“I would like to be loved for what I am. I am not perfect. I have often hurt others involuntarily. I would like to hear ‘I love you.’ often. That I’m beautiful.”

~

“I would like to be loved for what I am and not as a thing that once used is then thrown away.”

~

“I would like my husband to share with me. I would like to know his deepest thoughts.”

~

“I would like to be loved just as I am.”

“I want to be loved by others as God loves others, in a forgiving way– accepting my faults in a forgiving manner.”

~

“Raymond, I am very lucky to be loved by my husband and 3 children, but would love to have more of God in my love.”

“Like a fragile flower which is picked and tended carefully and lovingly and is always watered with love and fed generously with kindness, and fondled with hands that tell me I am as precious as they are who pick me up and tend to me in God's wonderful Garden, and when my bloom ebbs and even dies, I still will be remembered fondly and lovingly and I will be in mind heart and prayer ”

~

“I would like to receive an honest caring from others, have time given to me, to feel that I'm special, to have things done for me (especially surprises), to have things shared with me, to be respected, to be touched and loved.”

~

“I would like to be loved with patience and understanding, to be accepted as I am.”

~

“I would like to be loved unconditionally, with tenderness, patience and understanding.”

~

“I would like to be loved with greeting smiles, to be listened to and have my feelings accepted as true and not rejected as rubbish or as garbage.”

~

“I would like to be loved unconditionally, with full understanding from the other, with respect.”

~

“I would like to be loved for the person that I am, for the way God has created me and for the gifts He has given me.”

~

“I would like to be loved for what I am.”  
“Totally, unconditionally and forever.”

~

“I would like to be acknowledged as a person, not taken for granted, to be called by my name (not some other name), to hear ‘I love you.’ To be welcomed upon a return and to be told I was missed.”

“I would like to be told always, ‘I love you.’”

~

“I would like to be loved as a person and not as a thing that is used and then put aside.”

~

“I would like my loved one to share everything with me and to know my spouse's most intimate thoughts.”

~



where the parish. We all want to be loved the same way, as the person that we are. Now you know how much you and your fellow humans are the same. Now you know how your loving spouse would like to be loved, how your children would like to be loved.

Since these are the ways we would like to be loved, is it not reasonable to love our dear Lord at least to these standards? If we who are selfish, forgetful and preoccupied feel so much pain when we are not loved or loved for the wrong reasons, imagine how our dear Lord feels when He who is Love Itself does not receive our love in return or is loved for the wrong reasons. Dearest Child of God, do you love your dear Lord, your Creator, your King, your bountiful Provider, your Redeemer, your faithful Friend and Counselor the way you would like to be loved?

Your Highness, our first priority in time and in eternity is the sweet task of loving Jesus our Lord and our God, our King, with all our heart, with all our soul and with all our mind.<sup>400</sup>

Your Highness, if anything (any thought, any person, any event or any preoccupation) tries to separate you from loving your dear Lord, with all your heart, all your soul and with all your mind, you will know such a prompt is not from the Holy Spirit. Exile it from your realm in the Kingdom of God.

### **25.7 Priority number two, your health.**

Your second priority, your Highness, is to love yourself.<sup>401</sup> I sincerely hope this book will add to all the reasons you already have for loving yourself, body and soul. The more you become aware of how much God loves you, the more you awaken to the realization that you are His child, the easier it should be to truly love yourself. You really are a very special person. Because of this, you must always be concerned for your spiritual, mental, emotional and physical well being. These are the building blocks that make you whole and complete. The reasons for this are obvious, for if you are not healthy, every person and everything under your governorship is in jeopardy. Now you know how you want to be loved, your next priority is to love others as you love yourself.

sons you already have for loving your spouse.

### **25.9 Priority number four, your children.**

Your fourth priority is to love your children as you love yourself. You must be concerned for their spiritual, mental, emotional and physical well being. Love them with all the love their little hearts can take. Your ministry is to help these Persons take their rightful place in their Father's House. This is the blessed mandate you have in Christ Jesus. Your Highness, I sincerely hope this book will add to all the reasons you already have for loving your children.

### **25.10 Priority number five, your work.**

Your fifth priority, your Highness, is to be a loving servant to your employer or a loving employer to your servants. To grow and bloom with him or them, for each is the apple of God's eye.<sup>402</sup> You must be concerned for their spiritual, mental, emotional and physical well being. Your ministry is to help these Persons take their rightful place their Father's House. This is the blessed mandate you have in Christ Jesus. Your Highness, I sincerely hope this book will add to all the reasons you already have for loving your employer or your employees.

### **25.11 Priority number six, your extended family, the community.<sup>403</sup>**

Your sixth priority is your commitment to the community, to love your community as you love yourself, to do your share in helping members of the community who are less fortunate than you.<sup>404</sup> You must be concerned for their spiritual, mental, emotional and physical well being. Your ministry is to help these Persons take their rightful place in their Father's House. This is the blessed mandate you have in Christ Jesus. Your Highness. I sincerely hope this book will add to all the reasons you already have for caring for those who live in your community.

When a prompt is clearly going to have a negative effect on your relationship with your King, or a negative effect on your health and well being, or that of your spouse, or that of your children, or that of your employer or your employees or that of the community such a

### **25.12 Work in conflict with priorities.**

How can a prompt be in conflict with your priorities? If a prompt pursues a lower priority at the expense of a higher priority, clearly it does not come from the Holy Spirit. Exile it from the Kingdom of God. Following is an example of how work can be in conflict with our dear Lord, self, spouse, family and community.

~

One day, while on duty in pastoral care at the hospital, I found myself drawn to a room in the coronary care unit. The patient was a person who recently retired as a senior executive with a large public corporation. He was sitting on his bed and looking out the window. It was as though he was expecting me. Almost immediately he began by sharing with me how he spent all his active life looking after the affairs of the corporation.

“I never saw my children growing up,” he said. “I was never with my wife to care for her, to love her, she who has given her all for me and the children. We hardly know each other,” he continued, “and now she's left me. The children are gone. The corporation doesn't even know I exist anymore. Here I am, alone with a gold watch, trying to survive a heart attack.” Then he cried and cried and cried. A river of tears flowed from his heart.

He made his career and his climb on the ladder of success his priority. In so doing, he gave up a unique opportunity to love our dear Lord, to rejoice in his own blessings and to love his sweetheart and their children. During those precious and unique years, the family grew up without him. He did not share life's daily adventures with them. He was not there, to console those tender little hearts, bruised on life's bumpy roads. He chose the challenges of a career over opportunities to grow, to share, to laugh and to cry with his family. These once-in-a-lifetime family events will never take place in his life again. Instead of loving the hearts God placed in his nest, he gave everything he had and was to strangers. He made his work and his career a priority at the expense of all the others. “Man does not live by bread alone but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.”<sup>406</sup>

I forget how long I stayed with him, but it was obvious this is where our King wanted me to be. He spoke and I listened and listened

his heart now yearned to do. At that moment I felt his heart was healed, his courage renewed.

A day or two later I asked about his whereabouts and was told he left the hospital. I was convinced he received a second chance. He paid a terrible price for his mistaken priority. He lost the love of God through his spouse and his children. She lost the love of God through her husband. The children lost the love of God through their father. These heavenly blessings were gone forever. The nest was now empty. He was alone with his gold watch. Unfortunately, there are many such experiences. What blindness! Who in his or her right mind would trade a lifetime of love and sharing for salary, position, a few gourmet meals and a gold watch? Satan is truly the Father of all lies. (John 8:45) This must never happen to you, your Highness.

~

Once I was with a friend who was dying. Sitting at his bedside, we talked about life and death, God and heaven, about how quickly the years fly by. I asked him what was he thinking of at this moment—what was going through his mind? Without hesitation he replied, “Gloria, my darling Gloria. I should have loved and cared for her a lot more than I did.”

Dear Child of God, this is one heartbreak you need not have. This day, today— is given to you to love and to care for your darling spouse and your darling children. With all your heart, minister God’s love to them while you have the blessed opportunity.

### **25.13 Example of ministry or community service in conflict with priorities.**

Once, I was a volunteer in the pastoral care department at one of our local hospitals. I did this one weekend a month, from 3:00 p.m. Friday afternoon to 5:00 p.m. Sunday afternoon. Alone, I was responsible for providing pastoral care to the patients. On this weekend, three sisters (adults) arrived from out of town to be with their elderly dying mother. I spent nearly all of that Sunday with them at their mother’s bedside. The day passed so quickly that it was five o’clock before I realized that Florence and the children were waiting for me— for our Sunday dinner together. What was I going to do?

away. I could see Florence and the children sitting at the table, waiting. Something was terribly wrong.

Spiritual, mental or emotional turbulence does not come from the Holy Spirit. I better stop and see what is going on. If I am to make a good decision, I had to follow some white lines on this “dark foggy night.” I needed something that would help me see things clearly. Mentally, I reviewed my priority list:

Priority number one– Jesus, being one with Him. This confusion, disorder, bewilderment and lack of Peace were sure signs that I was not one with our dear Lord.

Priority number two– my health, mental, emotional and physical. I spent two days giving pastoral care to a 300-bed hospital, all departments (emergency, coronary care, intensive care and general care). If you have done this type of work, you know how draining it can be. To stay on, longer than my shift, for an unknown length of time would be in conflict with my second priority, my health.

Priority number three– Florence. Florence was alone all week (I was at work), and now all weekend (my ministry at the hospital). Sunday dinner and Sunday evening was an important time for our togetherness. Staying at the hospital was going to be conflict with my third priority– Florence.

Priority number four– the children. The children were without a father all week and all weekend. Sunday dinner together was an important family event. Staying at the hospital was going to be in conflict with my fourth priority– the children.

Priority number five– my job. I had to be at work Monday morning and needed a good night's sleep. Staying at the hospital waiting for this person to die, was going to be in conflict with my fifth priority– my job.

Priority number six– community service. This event was turning a good thing into a bad thing. My shift was over at 5:00 p.m. The hospital staff would take over. If I stayed, there would be confusion about who was responsible for what.

I then saw what was happening. In my mind, going home for Sunday dinner meant abandoning the three sisters. If I did that, what would they think of ME? Their dying mother became my Project. The

Since the reason for staying was not valid and the reasons for leaving were, that was the answer—leave. Staying was causing all kinds of anxiety and confusion. Leaving was going to put everything in order again. This left me with a feeling of peace and well being. This was the sign (Peace... God's Presence) that gave me the assurance I needed. I knew what decision to make.

Throughout the day, the sisters and I prayed together. Full of faith and confidence, we placed their loving mother in Christ's dependable arms. If we were sincere (and we were), He was looking after things as indeed He always does. We did all we could do. I gave the mother and the three sisters all the love and care I could while we were together. It would not be fair to stay glued to them. It would have been very inconsiderate not to give them the privacy they needed to live this unique and intimate experience as a family. This was a time for a special sharing with one another. This was a time for them to love their dying mother in a very special way. Besides, the hospital staff managed to do quite well before I came on the scene, Thank You!

My family had spent the weekend without me. It wasn't fair to leave them alone for Sunday dinner and that special time of togetherness we always have on Sunday evenings. I was in peace. Order had returned. Everything was clear again. All of this took about five minutes, so you can imagine the intensity of the turbulence within.

At the nursing station, I left a note for the three sisters. I told them I had to leave. I told them the hospital staff was very compassionate and that together as sisters they could cope with this event. Then, in peace, I went home for Sunday dinner with my family. We had a wonderful evening.

I nearly did to my family in ministry what the corporate executive did to his family in employment.

Three weeks later the hospital received a letter from the sisters. It was a letter of appreciation. They thanked me for what I had done for them that weekend. They said their mother passed away at 11:30 p.m. Sunday night and that her death was quiet and peaceful.

The prompting discerned and the decisions made, kept all Kingdom priorities in order. In collaboration with the Holy Spirit any-

Everyone, mother, sisters, hospital staff, Florence, the children and I were where we were supposed to be. With God's help, I discerned wisely.

What sign identified the Enemy who caused all this? The Tempter's hallmark, his infamous question and the inner disturbance that followed. That voice from within that has its roots in false pride and vanity, "What are they going to think of you if you leave?" This discernment was in a hospital, a community service setting. Use the process in any situation where you find yourself in similar difficulties.

Your Highness, when a prompt puts you down, discredits you or has any kind of negative impact on your worth, it does not come from the Holy Spirit. Exile such prompts from your Kingdom.

#### **25.14 Discernment when family service in conflict.**

There was another family event that I would like to share with you, when discernment was difficult.

A cousin living in a far away city had died. My aunt telephoned and asked me to come and be with her, and to be sure I brought my deacon suit (my alb). She loved me as much as she did her own deceased son and was depending on me to be with her in her grief.

After her call, I shared the news with Florence. She reminded me that if we went we would miss our son Marc's high school graduation. As president of the Student Council, he was going to give the closing address. See how naturally she reigns as Monarch? Her priorities are always in order. These two events were clearly in conflict, and following my priority table, Marc's graduation came first (family before community).

Marc overheard our conversation. The three of us (Florence, Marc and I) discussed the situation together. Then Marc came up with this suggestion.

"Dad," he said, "you and mother are one in marriage, wherever you are she is and wherever she is you are. If mother comes to the graduation, you will be there as well, and if you go to the funeral, she will be there also."

With a quick glance, Florence and I shared our astonishment. We agreed with his proposal. I would go to the funeral and Florence

all. We thanked our dear Lord for having blessed us with this opportunity to be together. We thanked Him for allowing us to share in this important event in our son's life. We saw it as His gift to us for having shared our lives with those who needed us in their time of grief. When priorities are in conflict or have you confused, never hesitate to get advice or help from another.

### **25.15 Example of conflict between children and spouse.**

When the prompt places more emphasis on one's children than on one's health, or on one's spouse, clearly it does not come from the Holy Spirit. Exile it from the Kingdom of God immediately.

Often, I meet families where the husband would give all his love to the child, but was completely indifferent to the heart of his beloved, the Heart who lovingly said, "Yes." to him in marriage. After all, it was this yes that made it possible to have this child in his life. The spouse who feels this indifference to her existence, suffers a very bitter heartbreak. It's no wonder that she does not want to have any more children.

A person must not give all his love and attention to a child at the expense of his or her spouse. This is not only breaking her heart, but is depriving her of the love she needs from him as her friend and sweetheart. The child at the center of all this is receiving a distorted love from one parent and little or no love from the other parent. The child (once welcomed by both parents as a gift from Heaven) is now an instrument for division. This is not a Spirit inspired event. When this happens, the child no longer receives real parental love— the love of two hearts in deep amorous communion, living in wonder and awe with THEIR child, the fruit of their love. No parent should ever love his or her children more than the spouse who was responsible with him (or her) for bringing them into the family. We must never be in situations where we love the gift more than the giver. As our love for the giver increases, so will our love for the gift.

### **25.16 When priorities seem to collide, get help.**

Once the provincial government telephoned me, asking if I was interested in a job. The position was that of senior advisor in municipi-



“Why do you hesitate to accept their offer?” he asked.

“I do not want anything to interfere with my studies for the permanent diaconate.” I replied.

“Why not ask them if they will allow you to continue your studies while in their employ?” he asked.

“They'll never agree to that.” I replied. “This is a Ministry with the provincial government. I can't see them agreeing to let me attend theology classes during work hours.”

“Why not ask them?” he said.

I telephoned the person who made the earlier calls and told him that I was studying for the permanent diaconate. My classes were during the week and that was the reason I could not accept his offer. I told him how important this program was for me, and that I was not going to let anything jeopardize my commitment to its successful completion.

To my great surprise, he replied, “That's no problem, Raymond. As long as your hours for classes are reasonable, you'll be free to complete your studies. We would be proud to have a permanent deacon as a member of our staff. It will also be an honor for our Ottawa branch.” I was flabbergasted! Never, never say, “No.” for another.

We agreed on a date for the formal interview. Shortly after that, I was a senior advisor in municipal administration for the provincial government. While with the Province, I had some of my most satisfying career challenges, helping many municipal officials get through some difficult periods in their own careers. With the help of my spiritual director (everyone should have one) doubts gave way to certainty. With the right information, we made a good decision. If you do not have a spiritual director, seek advice from someone you trust and respect, someone you feel safe with.

### **25.17 Why there must be priorities.**

To summarize, your Highness, only when the event discerned:

- will increase your love for and bring your heart closer to Jesus,
- will be beneficial to your health and well being,
- will strengthen your relationship with your spouse and contribute to her health and well being

tribute to her health and well being

and Jesus our King says, “Every kingdom divided against itself is heading for ruin; and no town, no household divided against itself can stand.”<sup>408</sup> Your Highness, exile such destructive prompts from the Kingdom of God, immediately.

### **25.18 Doubt.**

The expression: “If in doubt, don't.” is very valid because the Holy Spirit is never in doubt. Prompts that bring doubts do not come from God. When there are doubts, it is either because you are being forced to do something or because you do not have all the information you need. In either case, the decision will not be a good one, either for you or for the Kingdom of God. When in doubt, get more information; if still in doubt, get still more information. Once you have all the information you can reasonably expect to have, if still in doubt, don't. In the Kingdom of God persons are not expected to do things without their full and free consent.

### **25.19 Anxiety.**

When a prompt brings anxiety, then it is certain that the prompt is not from the Holy Spirit. Jesus is the Way, the Truth and the Life with Whom there is no anxiety.<sup>409</sup>

Our King tells us, “Peace I bequeath to you, my own peace I give you, a peace the world cannot give, this is my gift to you.”<sup>410</sup> Prompts that generate anxiety are from the Evil one and prompts from the Evil one:

- Bring a disturbing presence.
- Bring feelings of uneasiness.
- Bring a sense of danger.
- Put your faculties on alert.
- Make you feel that something is not quite right here.
- Bring on anxiety.

Do not respond to these prompts. With your sword, (will) exile them from the Kingdom of God.

For a long time I suffered all kinds of anxieties, by wanting to know “what was ‘round the next corner before I even arrived at the intersection ” In other words what did the future hold? Many of us think

“There's a time and there's a place for everything.”<sup>411</sup>

Our King tells us, “not to worry about your life and what you are to eat, nor about your body and how you are to clothe it. Surely life means more than food, and the body more than clothing! Look at the birds in the sky. They do not sow or reap or gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not worth much more than they are? Can any of you, for all his worrying, add one single cubit to his span of life? And why worry about clothing? Think of the flowers growing in the fields; they never have to work or spin; yet I assure you that not even Solomon in all his regalia was robed like one of these. Now if that is how God clothes the grass in the field which is here today and thrown into the furnace to-morrow, will he not much more look after you, men of little faith? So do not worry; do not say, ‘What are we to eat? What are we to drink? How are we to be clothed?’ It is the pagans who set their Heart on all these things. Your heavenly Father knows you need them all. Set your Hearts on his Kingdom first, and on his righteousness, and all these other things will be given to you as well. So do not worry about tomorrow: tomorrow will take care of itself. Each day has enough trouble of its own.”<sup>412</sup>

### **25.20 Without Peace we have nothing.**

Your Highness, respond only to prompts accompanied by the presence of Peace. The world can give money, reasons, arguments and logic, but only Heaven can give Peace. Jesus tells us: “Peace I bequeath to you, my own peace I give you, a peace the world cannot give, this is my gift to you.”<sup>413</sup> There are many persons in this world who have everything, everything that is except Peace. Regretfully, if they do not have Peace they have nothing. Without Peace we simply cannot enjoy what we do have, no matter how expensive or varied our possessions may be. Things can never fulfil us.

The spirit of this world tries to have us believe that happiness is in having material things. Through its never ending assaults, it tells us that by buying this and by buying that we will find happiness and (by inference) find peace in our lives. These lies bombard us daily. Obviously, we have to work for the money needed to buy this or that. *Once we do have this or that and we do not find the peace we were*

for doctors and psychiatrists and so on.

After sacrificing years of togetherness (for the sake of more money), we end up having still less money than before, a lot more junk and no Peace. So, we work even harder with longer hours for the peace and happiness we still yearn for. Then one day, we discover that this search was indeed a useless pursuit, a waste of time, or, we simply gave up. After much trial, tribulation, heartbreak and sorrow, we finally see the truth. After having lost the happiness of years of togetherness with spouse and family, years we cannot reclaim, our eyes are finally opened. Eventually we discover that there never was or will ever be enough money to buy peace and happiness. The losses are all yours: Loss of the opportunity to blossom as God's child. Loss of health. Loss of time with your loved ones. Loss of the opportunity to drink in this wonderful life to the full.

The only persons who profited from these false teachings were the Devourers, persons who were not concerned with your welfare but their own greed at your expense. This is what identifies them as Devourers. They devoured your time, your health, your togetherness, the sanctity of your family, your happiness and your right to Peace. They devoured some of the greatest gifts and treasures ever given to you by Heaven— life, health, time, intimacy, growth, development, self-realization, all given to you by heaven to help you, "... love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."<sup>414</sup>

Conversely, there are many persons in the Kingdom of God, who live in the deep, secure, healing, satisfying, consoling embrace of Peace. With Peace like this, they have everything— they do not need anything else. Indeed, anything that is not from the Kingdom of God would be a serious threat to their precious gift of Peace, to their celestial happiness.

No matter what their status in this world, a Monarch's first concern is, being a grateful son or daughter to a loving heavenly Father. For such hearts, a glass of refreshing life-giving water brings more delight than the finest champagne. A slice of bread brings more joy and thanksgiving than the finest twelve-course dinner. An orange is a gift from heaven's own orchards. The hand of a loved one is easily chosen over diamonds and rubies. For such persons the waters of life hanni-

not in harmony with God's will, with God's Love. You will know what parts of your life are obstacles to His Peace. Put your hand in His and your trust in Him. Soon your life will turn around dramatically, from darkness to daylight, from pain to jubilation, from despair to audacity and from stress to Peace, sweet blessed heavenly Peace.

### **25.21 The bottom line.**

If one partner has his priorities out of order, the other must hold on to his or hers, being patient until the other is back on track. If both spouses have their priorities out of order, there will be chaos. Help is needed, help that must come from the outside.

Your Highness, it does not make sense to say we Love Jesus and to cause division in His Kingdom. It does not make sense to love and care for strangers outside the home and neglect to love and care for your darling spouse at home. It does not make sense to love your child, and not love your spouse, for it was her love for you that brought this child into your life. It does not make sense to love and care for children outside the home and not love and care for your own precious, unique children at home. It does not make sense to spend one's energies in building the church outside the home and abandoning the church inside the home. It does not make sense to have everything, except the peace you need to enjoy life and be truly alive. If you want to avoid breaking our Lord's heart, your heart, your spouse's heart and your children's heart(s), get your priorities in order!

Keep your heart focused on these priorities and place your trust in God for the rest. The rewards will be a thousand fold.

When you work with your King, helping Him to build His Kingdom, He will not abandon you, He will not abandon your spouse or your children. You will have all His treasures as you reign from His throne, in Peace.

God be with you.

[A source of valuable information that every Catholic home should have, is the "Catechism of the Catholic Church, John Paul II" published by Doubleday, a division of Bantam Dou-

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 26.**

### **Spirit or Serpent?**

#### **26.1 When are prompts from the Holy Spirit or from selfishness?**

When selfishness attacks and badmouths the inspirations of the Heart, it is with much effrontery and overbearing arrogance. It persistently screams out a torrent of reasons and excuses why you should not act on the advice and counsels of the Heart. You will see a good example of this in a moment.

Selfishness chooses its own projects. It never agrees with those of the Heart, for the dreams of the Heart are diametrically opposite to those of selfishness. Selfishness can only love self and not others, so it cannot be a good advisor to the Monarch where the Kingdom of God is concerned. The Monarch should dismiss such prompts when he sees them for what they are, a sign of the presence of the Evil One. But how can you tell if a prompt is selfish or not, if it is from the Holy Spirit or from the Serpent?

#### **26.2 Discerning at 110 kilometers an hour.**

One spring I gave a retreat in a parish in Metropolitan Toronto East. The series began Monday evening and ended Friday evening. When Saturday came 'round, very tired and quite drained, I loaded all my equipment and teaching aids into the car and began my return journey home. I was away for seven days and was anxious to return to familiar surroundings. I was driving west on Highway 401 (a multi-lane expressway north of Toronto) heading for the Barrie exit when it happened.

Suddenly, a voice from within, an inner prompt, directed my attention to my sick aunt. She lived in an apartment at the very southern boundary of the city. She was a widow and ill with cancer. The message was that I should go to her. If I was going to visit her, the best way to get there was to take the Don Valley Parkway, whose exit

you have the right to keep going. You visited her two months ago. There is no need to go back. Why face all that traffic again? Head for home and give yourself a break, you deserve it. You haven't been with Florence for a week. You did enough for God this week." On and on it went with such other similar logical arguments.

Still traveling at high speed with traffic slipping by on both sides and the off ramp fast approaching, I had to make a decision soon. The counter cerebral arguments were so intense and so determined in their opposition that I was getting more and more confused. Was the first prompt simply a feeling of guilt in being so close to her and not visiting her? Was it a legitimate counsel from the Holy Spirit? Was I simply experiencing a nice suggestion? One that I could postpone to another time? What about the counter arguments? Were they right? I had to decide quickly; otherwise, I would miss the exit lane and the off ramp.

I decided that the prompt to go to see my Aunt was legitimate and from the Holy Spirit. Very clearly heard, it was quiet and authoritative but not forceful. It was focused on concern for the Other and not on Self. It was a peaceful invitation, one that respected my dignity, and for these reasons, the Holy Spirit was identified as the Prompter.

The counter arguments, on the other hand, were very forceful, focusing on my legitimate rights to do what I wanted. The cerebral opposition did not bring any Peace to me as did the prompts from my Heart. This was not the voice of a friend, for a friend does not confuse another.

When I realized that it was my Heart versus my so-called logic, that was it. Logic has no authority to oppose the Heart, only to serve it. My "cerebral advisors" were clearly in violent opposition to my Heart, to the Royal Confidante, to the Other. Clearly, this was the Serpent counseling me. In such circumstances, I have to choose the prompt from the Heart because it is the Truth, the Holy Spirit. Logic does not know what Truth is or even what it means.

I began changing lanes and arrived at the exit ramp just in time to take the Don Valley Parkway to Lakeshore Boulevard. I left the northern limits of the city to head for the shores of Lake Ontario. A short while later I arrived at my Aunt's apartment building. After

"Where are you?" Florence asked.

I explained what happened.

"Your mother is desperately trying to reach you," she said. "She telephoned the rectory (the parish where I gave the retreat), but you had just left," she continued.

"Why? What does she want?" I asked.

"Your Aunt is dying. Since you're the only one in the family who is nearby, you should get to her quickly."

"Where is she?" I asked.

"At the Princess Margaret," she replied. (The Princess Margaret is a hospital in Toronto that treats and cares for cancer patients.)

I told Florence that I would head there straightaway and would be in touch with her later during the day.

So... the prompt WAS from the Holy Spirit. I had indeed properly discerned. This really was a Kingdom event. I marvel constantly on how simple it is for God to do things. I felt strengthened in my discernment skills and in my union with the Holy Spirit.

Now, how do I get to the Princess Margaret? Driving in a large city terrifies me. I went inside the service station and asked the owner for directions.

"No problem," he said. "Go down this street, until you come to such and such a street (about 3-4 miles); then turn right. Drive a few blocks north. You can't miss it."

"Well, that's simple enough." I sighed.

"In the car," I continued, "I have a lot of expensive sound equipment and teaching aids that I didn't bother to pack properly. I wouldn't want anything stolen. Do you know where I could park once I get there?"

"No problem," he said, "I used to own the service station across from the Princess Margaret. Just speak to so and so and tell him I sent you. He will let you park the car next to the office. It has a large plate glass window. He will keep an eye on your things for you."

All praise and glory and love and benediction to our dear Lord, who guides his children in His holy, loving service, who watches over them and does not abandon them.

*I arrived at the service station and things worked out just fine*



presence of our dear Lord. Through His minister, our King consoled her and comforted her with His forgiving and understanding Heart. In these her final hours, again, He gave Himself to her, one last time, in His Holy Eucharist.

Together, we prayed to our dear Mother Mary. I asked Her to ensure that her special angels watch over my aunt until she arrives into Her arms. I left my rosary on the bedpost, as a sign of Mary's presence with her. Later that day, the first of her children arrived. By now, she was at peace with God and in Mary's hands. It was time for me to go. The time she had left belonged to her and her children. The better part of the day had gone by. I telephoned Florence, told her what happened and that I would be home on Sunday. Everything was peaceful in the Kingdom of God.

~

What is the lesson? When your Heart (Love) invites you to see to the needs of an Other, and your Head (Logic) or your Muscle (Selfishness) violently criticizes and opposes this invitation, you know that these prompts from the Heart are from God; otherwise, there would not be such vicious opposition to them from the Head (Logic) or from the Muscle (Selfishness). After awhile, your Highness, it will be easy to discern which prompts are from the Holy Spirit (Heart) and which are from vainglory, false pride, logic and selfishness (mind and flesh). Your holy vocation of sharing with Jesus in making creation anew will become easier to discern as time goes by. Soon, each and every one of your days will be lived for your heavenly Father's greater glory.

Although I did not know it at the time, the prompt made me an instrument for God's Love. He called on me to help bring my aunt to the end of her life on earth. With all the love, peace and serenity God could give her, He prepared her for her return home.

In my early years, I attended school in Toronto, which was far away from my home in Northern Ontario. My aunt often visited me at the college. She was responsible for making many a lonely day a little easier to handle. Thank you Father, for allowing me to return this love to her through your heavenly intercession.

and to have “His will done on earth as it is in Heaven.” This is what our intelligence, memory, imagination, creativity and all the other powers of our mind are for, to serve His loving Heart.

“One thing I ask of Yahweh, one thing I seek: to dwell in the house of the Yahweh all the days of my life, to enjoy the sweetness of Yahweh and to consult with Him in His Temple.”<sup>416</sup>

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 27.**

### **Community Approval.**

#### **27.1 Importance for discerning.**

Your Highness, hearing the community speak is an important consideration when discerning. Community does not only mean the community at large but also the community around you (your family, your friends, your neighbors, persons you work with and so on).

#### **27.2 Example of a community speaking.**

Once, a position became available as a municipal clerk-treasurer for a small municipality with a population of 1,200. I was out of town when this happened. When I returned:

-Florence told me about it.

-My godmother (who also saw the ad) telephoned to tell me about it.

-The tenants upstairs told me about the position and some of my friends called to tell me about it.

All were telling me to apply for the job and all this happened in the space of a couple of days. My problem, was that I never worked in a municipal office. Yet when I heard the community speaking so loudly and clearly, I decided to examine the matter further.

I found out who the reeve was, where he worked (he was sales manager with a lumber company) and went to ask him about the job. Unknown to me (I had not seen the ad), the date for receiving applications was closed. We met on a Wednesday afternoon. He invited me to attend the Friday council meeting to meet members of council (none of which I knew).

That Friday evening, after being interviewed by council, I was asked to leave the room while they considered the matter in private. A short while later they called me back and asked me to complete an application; then they hired me on the spot. I began work as clerk-treasurer the following Monday morning. This in spite of the fact there were

report on how the national capital of our country should be governed.

Later, I was hired as a senior advisor for the provincial government on municipal affairs. Later still, I went on my own as a private consultant in municipal management and administration.

This all took place because I took notice when I heard the community speak.

### **27.3 The bottom line.**

When the community speaks, you should listen attentively, for it is in the interest of the community that its members be healthy and strong. Never forget, God speaks through men and events.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 28.**

### **Love and Responsibility.**

#### **28.1 How special are you?.**

Your Highness, you now have some idea of how much Heaven loves you.

God made you in His image, an image you can relate to through His Son Jesus our King.

He places before you a beautiful and wondrous universe, to live in, to govern and to glorify Him with.

You now know how the Tempter tries to deceive you, what the dangers of temptation and the terrible consequences of sin are. You now know when the Evil One is present and how to protect yourself, your darling spouse and your blessed children from his wiles. You now see how the spirit of the world denies God and glorifies the Evil One.

How do you feel knowing that Jesus personally resurrected you from the dead and that you now have life through Him, with Him and in Him?

How special are you? How great is Heaven's love for you? The Holy Spirit is your personal Advisor. That's how special you are! He is continually sharing His wonderful gifts with you.

How special are you? Mary, mother of God and Queen of heaven and earth, is also your Mother, the person who can make all of your petitions for God's greater glory come true. She has power over all of God's creation. She is in Jesus' name, in your Heart, now, at this moment, to counsel you and to help you to grow in God's favor.

How special are you? Each day, Jesus invites you to be His guest at His table, where He will nourish you with His own Body and His Blood.

How special are you? Through His loving sacrament of reconciliation, Jesus is there to reconfirm His Love and His trust in you.

How special are you? If you get ill, Jesus' healing Love will embrace you

### **28.2 Your royal duties.**

What are they? To serve your heavenly Father as His Christ, in harmony with His gospels and His Church, “and I live now not with my own life but with the life of Christ who lives in me.”<sup>417</sup>

What are your royal duties? With the Life and the power of Christ in you your Highness, you are to console the suffering, to heal the sick, to improve the quality of life for God's children, to eradicate injustice, to dream dreams and receive visions to restore creation for the greater glory of your heavenly Father. Remember that Jesus tells us, “It is not those who say to me, ‘Lord, Lord,’ who will enter the kingdom of heaven, but the person who does the will of my Father in heaven.”<sup>418</sup>

### **28.3 The bottom line.**

Your Highness, the blind need to see. The lame need to walk. Lepers need cleansing. The deaf need to hear. The dead need to be resurrected and the poor need the Good News preached to them.<sup>419</sup> Saints have to be raised and brought to full bloom. This then is your mandate your Highness: in loving service to Jesus your King and Teacher, to reign as Monarch in your corner of the Kingdom of God, carrying out the will of your heavenly Father.

To help you further in knowing how to reign in the Kingdom of God and what you should watch for, we will now travel through three different kingdoms.

In one Kingdom, we will see how life and creativity are encouraged.

In another Kingdom, we will see how life and creativity are sterilized and paralyzed.

In the last Kingdom, we will see how life and creativity are destroyed.

In reality, there are only two Kingdoms, The Kingdom of Light and the Kingdom of Darkness. In the journey we are about to make, these are identified as the Kingdom of God (Kingdom number 1) and the Kingdom of Satan (Kingdom number 3). The Kingdom of Man (Kingdom number 2) which I have added. is the bridge (symbolizing

prise or government you should have allegiance, and with which person, institution, organization, enterprise or government you should be at war.<sup>420</sup> You will learn how to protect your spouse and your children from those who would destroy life and creativity in your home, this sacred “Church,” this blessed community in the Kingdom of God.

We will do this by looking at what comes forth from the mouths of these persons, institutions, organizations, enterprises or governments. We will look at what comes from their thrones, their laws and their statutes, their priorities and the effects these have on their kingdoms. As fruit identifies the tree it comes from, words from one’s mouth identify the Heart that speaks. Our King tells us, “There is no sound tree that produces rotten fruit, nor again a rotten tree that produces sound fruit. For every tree can be told by its own fruit: people do not pick figs from thorns, nor gather grapes from brambles. A good man draws what is good from the store of goodness in his heart; a bad man draws what is bad from his store of badness. For a man’s own words flow out of what fills his heart.”<sup>421</sup>

In these kingdoms, we will see the visible signs that identify those persons who reign there. So enlightened, you will be better able to govern your Kingdom, to protect yourself and those you love from God’s enemies. There is only one kingdom that gives life, peace and happiness. The other two are comparable to living as a slave in a concentration camp or in hell itself, neither of which is your lot or the lot of your spouse, your children or your brothers and sisters.

Your Highness, St. Paul tells us, “We have been given possession of an unshakable kingdom. Let us therefore hold on to the grace we have been given and use it to worship God in the way that he finds acceptable, in reverence and fear. For our God is a consuming fire.”<sup>422</sup>

The three kingdoms that we will visit are:

1. The Kingdom of God.
2. The Kingdom of Man.
3. The Kingdom of Satan.

When this journey is over your Highness, you should know a great deal more about who you are and about the world around you. Indeed, this may be the first time in your life where you actually visit your kingdom, meet your fellow countrymen and the persons in power





This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 29.**

### **The Kingdom of God.**

#### **29.1 How to Identify It.**

Your Highness, you can identify the Kingdom of God by the signs of loving concern you see for the health, welfare and happiness of the Other. Clearly visible throughout the Kingdom, these signs reveal how the Other is welcomed, is loved, is fed, is dressed, is housed, is healed, is educated, is helped to grow, and is encouraged to blossom and attain his or her full potential.

In this Kingdom, the Monarch not only gives to the Other, but he gives lovingly. The Other receives his gifts with childlike gratitude and puts them to good use. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

#### **29.2 Focus of concern is for the Other.**

In the Kingdom of God the Monarch longs for each person to know how unique he or she is. How singular each person is. How precious he or she is and how the Kingdom is blessed with his or her presence. In this Kingdom the Monarch knows each Person by name. His concern for his or her happiness and well-being is central to all his pondering and deliberations. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

#### **Do I really want to be like God?**

One year we were preparing Christmas dinner for Florence's mother (91 years young) and her sisters. Mother Blais has a brother 90 years of age (a former missionary who spent 50+ years in Africa helping to care for lepers). It was unthinkable that (what may very well be our last Christmas together) he would be alone in the nursing home while we would relish the joy of a family dinner on Christmas day. I telephoned and he gladly accepted to join us. Florence and I spent the day preparing for the event. Late in the afternoon, I drove to the nursing home to pick him up, and that is when it happened. While driving, I heard myself saying in my heart

God's child. She never lives for herself. She is always genuinely and happily concerned for the welfare and happiness of others, especially me. Now, it's time to be honest with God and with myself.

“Do I really want to be our Father's son, caring for others like He does? Like Jesus does? Like Florence does? Do I?”

### **29.3 Sounds are sounds of Life.**

In the Kingdom of God, the air is alive with the sound of conversation and laughter. As each person grows, he or she marvels in awe as each heart continually awakens to the wonder he or she is. In the Kingdom of God, everyone shares with interest the events and activities in each Other's life. Every anniversary (no matter how small the circumstance) is an occasion to celebrate the Other as a Kingdom event.

[One reason why Monarchs (Kingdom of God) remember the dates of birthdays, anniversaries, marriages, baptisms and so on, as well as the names of aunts, uncles, nieces and so on, is because these events are intense emotional human experiences. Intense emotional human experiences are not (as a rule) forgotten. Dates and names are embedded in those experiences and are as present to one's memory as the experience itself; indeed, the date or name is a part of that experience. Rulers (Kingdom of Man) and Devourers (Kingdom of Satan) are not focused on Others like the Monarch. Their intense emotional experiences are with projects or self. They remember events connected with either their project or something they did for themselves. Everything else is a blur. Persons who truly wish to be the person God made, and not what anyone else has made, will learn how to integrate and relate with Others. Each encounter with an Other, should be a memorable, emotional experience.]

In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

or her name is. Sometimes the response was, Mrs. \_\_\_\_\_.

By replying Mrs. she was pulling rank on me— using a form of force to keep us distant from each other. Force is not from the Holy Spirit. I knew immediately that this person was telling me to keep back. She was not ready to share with me or to let me come into her world.

[When persons are reluctant to step out of their skin to meet you, it is because they have a hurt that is still raw and painful.]

Depending on the circumstance and what the prompt from the Holy Spirit would be, I might reply, “I meant what is your given name, Mrs. \_\_\_\_\_?” If she replied, “Elizabeth” then I would say, “Good morning Elizabeth, my name is Raymond. I'm very happy to be with you today.” The whole climate of our being together changed. She abandoned her defensive stance. Because of this, the opportunity for her to meet Jesus, in whose name I was there to visit her, increased tremendously. If Jesus could be with Elizabeth and not with Mrs. \_\_\_\_\_, He would be with his daughter and she would be with her Lord and her God. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.5 Happy faces.**

In this Kingdom, faces are happy faces because they know that the Monarch loves them and there is nothing to fear from him. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.6 Wounds and bruises.**

Persons who live in this Kingdom have no fear or hesitation in showing the Monarch their wounds and bruises (heartbreaks and disappointments). They know the Monarch will heal them and show them how to avoid being hurt again. “I am the good shepherd; I know my own and my own know me.”<sup>423</sup> In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

mandate to conquer the earth.<sup>424</sup> In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.9 Being Oneself.**

In this Kingdom persons are themselves. They do not have to pretend, to act, to be political or be of a certain sex. Here, persons need not be members of a particular group or clique, a certain color, or skilled in scheming, to receive and enjoy the Monarch's love and attention. They know the needs of all are assured. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.10 Experiences are learning opportunities.**

In this Kingdom, the Monarch is not concerned or preoccupied with so-called blunders, mistakes and errors made by self or by Others. He sees these as blessed opportunities of discovery and learning. The Monarch's response in such situations is:

“Don't worry, you could not have known that was going to happen. You'll be ready next time.”

“This is a difficult problem. Don't let it discourage you. You are doing fine.”

“You should see the mistakes I made on my first attempt. You're on the right track. Keep it up.”

In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.11 Creativity is the Word.**

In the Kingdom of God, everyone is encouraged and assisted in developing their creative skills and talents. The adage, “God helps those who help themselves.” is true indeed, for it is in the loving creative activity of the Heart that God is present and active. May I respectfully recommend that your Highness reflect on this, long and hard, “It is in the loving creativity of the Heart that God is present and active.” In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

peace.”<sup>427</sup> There is order in the Kingdom of God.

“After he had come down from the mountain, large crowds followed him. A leper now came up and bowed low in front of him: 'Sir', he said, 'if you want to, you can cure me.' Jesus stretched out his hand, touched him and said, 'Of course I want to! Be cured!' And his leprosy was cured at once. Then Jesus said to him, 'Mind you do not tell anyone, but go and show yourself to the priest and make the offering prescribed by Moses, as evidence for them.’”<sup>428</sup> There is order in the Kingdom of God.

One year the feast of our dear Lady's birthday fell on a Sunday. In the Roman Catholic Church, on Sundays, we celebrate feasts of our dear Lord. They take precedence over any other. Monday (following the anniversary of Her birthday), I planned to pray the Liturgy of the Hours of Her feast day instead of the prescribed office for that Monday. I felt that we should not bypass Her birthday simply because it fell on a Sunday. I began to pray the office for the anniversary of Her birth, when very clearly I heard Her say within me, “It would be better to be in full communion with the prayers of the Church today.” In other words, today (Monday) worldwide, the Church was praying the office prescribed for that day. Not one person should be separated from being in full communion with the Holy Spirit, not even for Her. There is order in the Kingdom of God.

~

Jesus says, “And indeed, which of you here, intending to build a tower, would not first sit down and work out the cost to see if he had enough to complete it? Otherwise, if he laid the foundation and then found himself unable to finish the work, the onlookers would all start making fun of him saying, ‘Here is a man who started to build and was unable to finish.’”<sup>429</sup> There is order in the Kingdom of God.

Once, I was ministering to the elderly in a nursing home. Before beginning the communion service in the small chapel, I prayed the rosary. I asked dearest Mother Mary to help me be a faithful minister of her Son's love to those he was confiding to my care. During these prayers, I received a prompt to bring the Eucharist to a resident who was terminally ill. She was a young lady but was in the nursing home because there was no room for her at the hospital. Her illness was

Placing the Eucharist in a facial tissue (I did not have my pix), I sheltered the Host in my closed hand. It was best if the other residents knew nothing of this; otherwise, they would be wondering why they were not receiving the Eucharist. I did not want to be the cause of gossip or commotion, which would have happened had I taken the very visible ciborium. There is order in the Kingdom of God.

Discern.

At the nursing station, I asked the nurse in charge if that person could receive the Eucharist.

“Yes she could.” she said.

There is order in the Kingdom of God.

Arriving at her room, I knocked on the door and entered. After explaining who I was, I told her I was there to bring the Eucharist to other residents in the chapel, and (while I was praying the rosary), Mother Mary prompted me to bring her Son to her for it was Her wish that He be with her. (Never let the fear of embarrassment prevent you from telling others of Heaven's love for you or for them.)

I asked her, “Would you like to receive the Eucharist?”

“Yes.” she nodded.

There is order in the Kingdom of God.

After a short prayer of preparation and thanksgiving, she received our dear Lord with simplicity and humility. As I was opening the door to leave the room, she spoke, “Please come again.” She left this world of pain and suffering a short while later.

There is order in the Kingdom of God.

~

If the prompt is not in conflict with community order, then the prompt is worthy of being discerned further.

If the prompt does not respect legitimate authority, then it does not come from the Holy Spirit. In the Kingdom of God, the Holy Spirit respects persons and positions, for each has a role to play in the order of things. If the prompt does not respect order, if it will cause confusion, require speed or disrupt, such prompts do not come from the Holy Spirit. Exile them from the Kingdom of God. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other

blue skies. We can tell that this is the Kingdom of God because persons here are free from anxiety and fear. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.15 Fragility of the Other.**

In the Kingdom of God, the Monarch knows how frail and fragile many persons are. He knows how limited some are, how many have suffered needlessly because of circumstances beyond their control. He knows that before coming here, Others tried to care for them as best they knew how. As taught by His Royal Confidante, "He does not break the crushed reed, nor quench the wavering flame."<sup>430</sup> In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.16 Peace.**

Wherever we may be in the Kingdom of God, the heavenly fragrance of Peace permeates the air, nourishing each heart with Its life-giving Love. When a prompt is received enveloped in Peace, it is a sure sign it is from the Holy Spirit. Prompts that do not come in Peace do not come from our dear Lord. Guided by the Staff of Peace, one will walk in paths that are sure and certain. "Though I pass through a gloomy valley, I fear no harm; beside me your rod and your staff are there, to hearten me."<sup>431</sup> In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

Once I was responsible for the ministry of baptism in a certain parish. This meant bringing together six or seven couples with their godparents, to prepare a community celebration of that sacrament.

One day my pastor telephoned me about a couple who asked to have their baby baptized. He asked if I would escort them through the program for the preparation of baptism. There is always a certain amount of excitement in such matters, for these are salutary events. I never cease to rejoice that I am a part of them. I telephoned the parents and we agreed when to meet.

When I arrived that Sunday evening the setting sun was taking its last bow. Their home was very large and expensive. I'm uncomfortable with large expensive homes probably because I'm not familiar

coming out of the kitchen. Steaks were apparently burning on the stove. He left for the kitchen, where I could hear him and Mrs. "...” talking to each other about me, and the parish and the baptism. Their conversation was loud enough for me to hear over the baby's cries. It was evident my presence disturbed him. It was also evident she feared him.

Returning to the foyer, he made it very clear to me they were going to have a traditional baptism, ALONE and not with other couples and "what was the Church up to anyway?"

We had so many baptisms in our parish and so few clergy that the only way we could meet the need, was through community celebrations. Often, we baptized five to seven babies in one celebration.

Then the telephone rang. With the baby still crying and the air full of smoke, he left to answer it. I was still in the foyer. I could hear him telling his wife that visitors were arriving from out of town and they would be there shortly. During these few seconds alone, I focused on what was happening.

1. He was not expecting me.
2. Baby was crying.
3. He did not want a community celebration.
4. He was frustrated with the Church
5. Mrs. ... was embarrassed at what was happening.
6. Steaks were burning.
7. Unexpected visitors were on the way.

One did not have to be an angel of light to see that there was no peace here. Staying under these conditions would be tantamount to forceful entry. Force is not used in the Kingdom of God. I was there in Christ's name. Our dear Lord does not impose and very clearly respects the authority that others have in their own kingdoms. Besides, He made us. He understands us better than we do ourselves.

"Mr. ...," I said, "it is obvious there has been some confusion about this appointment. I'll telephone later in the week and we'll make another." He agreed and I left.

Once outside, I felt like leaping into the air. Thank you dear Lord, thank you, thank you, thank you for giving me an insight into what lies ahead for me. Thank you for showing me where this family



make every effort not to be an obstacle to His presence, as indeed I try to do always. It is good that the Holy Spirit reminds us of this now and then.

Having again placed this pastoral ministry under Mary's loving care, I returned to their home a few days later and was warmly welcomed. The three of us sat in the luxurious living room where we talked. I let events unfold as the Spirit chose. Suddenly he asked, "Raymond, how come you became a deacon in the Church?"

I answered him with no holds barred. I shared with him all the wonderful ways God has loved me, and all I could do in response to so much Love was to say "Father, do with me what you will." As the discussion blossomed, I could feel God's Peace envelop the room, yearning to embrace this couple and give them the comfort, peace and security of His love.

"Raymond, I would like to have that kind of relationship with God," he said. "What should we do to prepare for our child's baptism?"

I explained the parish program which consisted of two three-hour sessions. We begin by recalling how our first parents sinned and the kind of life they brought onto themselves and their descendants. We then review how our dear Lord came to bring us back into our Father's home. We would look at how His Love was extending through time and space, through these parents. We would see how He personally would immunize these beautiful wonders of God's hand against the poison of sin. Peace once again filled the room. There was no doubt Jesus was with us.

When the bells rang on baptism Sunday, seven couples, once strangers, were now celebrating as a close and intimate little community. Their seven little angels were now in the loving and protective arms of the Church, their parents. Our hearts were filled with wonder and joy. "And know that I am with you always; yes, to the end of time."<sup>433</sup>

There is peace in the Kingdom of God.

### **29.17 Lies.**

No matter what form or how small, there is no room for lies in the Kingdom of God. A lie is totally unacceptable and a complete on-

**29.18 Speed.**

Since time does not exist in the Kingdom of God, there is no need for speed. Speed is in opposition to everything God stands for. Jesus is the Beginning and the End. He has no need for speed and neither do those who govern in His name. "Then the One sitting on the throne spoke, he said, 'It is already done. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End.'"<sup>436</sup>

There is no need for speed in the Kingdom of God, "it is already done." Only Satan and those who follow him are concerned with speed, for the day of their eternal damnation is coming. Prompts that call for speed are not from the Holy Spirit. Exile these prompts from the Kingdom of God. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

**29.19 Blame.**

In the Kingdom of God, there is no place for blame. Prompts that blame others in any way, do not come from the Holy Spirit. Blame has its roots in sin. You will remember blame was used by Adam and Eve after the first sin. Had it not been for sin, the word blame would not be in our vocabulary. Our dear Lord is without sin, so it is not He who inspires the prompt to blame.<sup>437</sup>

Not only persons can blame. Governments, institutions and other organizations can also blame. When you feel pushed to blame or when you hear others blaming, be on your guard. Do not converse with spirits who blame, for they live outside their heavenly Father's home and are not Monarchs who breathe Life in the Kingdom of God.

When it is evident from this sign (blame) or other signs that it is not the Holy Spirit speaking to you, ADDRESS THAT PERSON BY HIS OR HER GIVEN NAME, the name God gave to him or her at baptism. In so doing, you will converse with the person God made in the Image of Jesus and not with any other spirit. You will have spoken to God's child and helped to awaken your brother or sister to the danger he or she is in. "Do not be afraid for I have redeemed you; I have called you by your name, you are mine."<sup>438</sup> In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

sin, the word, “condemn” would not be a part of our vocabulary.

Not only persons can condemn, but governments, institutions and other organizations can also condemn. When you feel pushed to condemn or when you hear others condemning, be on your guard. Do not converse with spirits who condemn, for they live outside their heavenly Father's home and are not Monarchs who breathe Life in the Kingdom of God.

When it is evident from this or other signs that it is not the Holy Spirit speaking to you, address THAT PERSON BY HIS OR HER NAME, the name God gave him or her at baptism. In so doing you will converse with the person God made in the image of Jesus and not with any other spirit. Our King says, “Do not give dogs what is holy; and do not throw your pearls in front of pigs, or they may trample them and then turn on you and tear you to pieces.”<sup>440</sup>

You must awaken and develop your listening skills, to know with whom you are in conversation with. By addressing the Other by his or her given name, and not speaking with the Ruler or Devourer, you will have spoken to God's child and helped to awaken your brother or sister to the danger he or she is in. “Do not be afraid for I have redeemed you; I have called you by your name<sup>441</sup> you are mine.”<sup>442</sup>

Of course, you must not be in the shadow of or under the grip of sin when trying to free another; otherwise, both of you will fall into the pit.<sup>443</sup> Monarchs do not blame or condemn, only Rulers and Devourers blame and condemn. There is no requirement for you to talk with Rulers and Devourers, only with other Monarchs. Rulers and Devourers have nothing in common with the children of God. In the Kingdom of God, words from the Monarch's mouth breathe life and creativity into the Other.

### **29.21 Force is God's option, not ours.**

1 Samuel, 2:9 tells us: “He safeguards the steps of the faithful but the wicked vanish in darkness (for it is not by strength that man triumphs).” Our King says, “Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you; in this way you will be sons of your Father in heaven, for he causes his sun to rise on bad men as well as good, and his rain to fall on honest and dishonest men alike.”<sup>444</sup> In the Kingdom of God

when they could negotiate on the division of assets. He didn't know how to respond. We discussed the situation.

He then advised her lawyer that she could have everything. He was not concerned about who would own this or that, but that his wife whom he loved very much was not to want for anything. His actions overwhelmed her. She withdrew her application for divorce. They reunited in a new relationship that was now stronger than ever.

Jesus tells us, "... offer the wicked man no resistance. On the contrary, if anyone hits you on the right cheek, offer him the other as well; if a man takes you to law and would have your tunic, let him have your cloak as well. And if anyone orders you to go one mile, go two miles with him. Give to anyone who asks, and if anyone wants to borrow, do not turn away."<sup>445</sup>

There is only one force powerful enough to confront and overcome any threat to the conjugal union— Love. But, Love is by its very nature a divine attribute. Our brother John tells us, "God is love."<sup>446</sup> God *is* Love and God's will is the active ingredient. Jesus is the only Person who can show us God's will. How can two hearts confront, overcome and conquer all the enemies and dangers that lie between them and their dreams without God (Love)? They cannot. Such hearts are alone and easy prey for roaming demons to devourer. There is no substitute for the power of Love. Our King tells us in no uncertain terms, "... cut off from me you can do nothing."<sup>447</sup> Force is God's option, not ours.<sup>448</sup> "God has spoken once, twice I have heard this: it is for God to be strong, it is for you Lord, to be loving; and you yourself repay man as his works deserve."<sup>449</sup>

### **29.23 Quiet more powerful than noise.**

Once while in Toronto, I went shopping for a portable stereo system. In one store the music was playing so loud, to speak one had to shout. There was no way I was going to compete with noise from a giant black and silver ghetto blaster.

"CAN I HELP YOU SIR?" shouted the sales clerk.

Without making a sound, I mouthed back, "I would like to buy a portable stereo radio-cassette player." Thinking that he couldn't hear me because of the noise, the sales clerk turned the system off. It was

me to telephone the police, to force his father-in-law to tell him where his wife and children were. They had been separated for some time. He had not seen his children since they were babies. He explained that he had a bad heart and wanted to see his children before anything happened to him. "By seeing a police uniform," he explained, "maybe he can be frightened into telling me where they are." To help him get what he wanted, he wanted to use force and fear on this person.

"We'll bring a uniform," I replied, "but it will not be a police uniform." I put on my Roman collar and we left for his father-in-law's.

As we arrived at a blighted area of the city, my cousin pointed out the building. Fearing there may be violence between him and the father-in-law (my cousin was a very high-strung person), I asked him to wait in the car. I crossed the street to an old yellow wooden apartment building.

Gripping what was left of the latch I pushed on the broken, narrow front door. Grudgingly, it limped open. I entered the dark enclosed porch area. Thanks to the strain of a lonely, jaundiced light bulb, I saw the first step of a narrow stairway. As I began my walk up, long black shadows on dirty walls appeared as faceless, ghoulish sentries. I felt I was being scrutinized, that my presence there was being questioned. They were so effective in protecting their own, I could not read the fading numbers on the apartment doors, in that dark musty hallway. Fortunately, a person happened by and directed me to the apartment I was looking for. I knocked.

Slowly, the door opened. A short stocky man, with a bald head and large white, limpid, sorrowful eyes looked up at me. He was in his undershirt. The sight of my Roman collar surprised him. I asked if I could speak with him, he nodded me in.

The only light in his small, dark, cluttered kitchen flickered from two portable black and white television sets. One was on top of the refrigerator. The other on the kitchen table. His meal consisted of a hot dog and a soft drink. He invited me to sit and we began to talk. I asked him if he would turn on a light.

I introduced myself and told him why I was there— that his son-in-law was in the car, that he had a bad heart and did not expect to live for very long and how he yearned to see his children. Could he tell

bureau drawer. He reached underneath a few items of clean clothing. Lifting a brown paper liner, he recovered two large black and white photos.

“Here,” he said, “take these pictures of the children. Give them to the father. I do not know where my daughter or the children are. These are the last pictures I received. I want him to have them.”

This gentle, solitary person who was obviously tired of life, still had a very generous heart. Though he was living alone in his own dark world, he was ready to give away one of his most precious possessions. These were his last photos of his daughter and his grandchildren. His generosity moved me profoundly. When he convinced me that he indeed wanted to give these to his son-in-law, I accepted them gratefully. We talked a little longer. Later, thanking him again, I left.

Returning to the car, I could read the anticipation on my cousin's face. I handed him the photos and relayed what his father-in-law told me. He looked at the pictures longingly. On our way home he said, “Raymond, this is even better than seeing my wife and the children. I don't think I could have handled the emotions of a live meeting, and possibly more fighting. Now, with these photos, I'll have my children with me, always.”

I explained to him the living conditions his father-in-law was in and that his meal that day consisted of a hot dog and a soft drink. He happily gave me fifty dollars, with which I immediately purchased groceries and brought them to his father-in-law that very afternoon.

My cousin then took the train back home. A few months later, he died. Remember what he wanted from the onset? The police. He wanted to use force. He wanted to frighten and scare this gentle, fragile person into submission. Force is God's option, not ours.

### **29.25 The most powerful force on earth.**

Do you know what the most powerful force in the world is? Your example. I repeat, the most powerful force on earth is your example. Many persons have crossed my path during my lifetime. Most were concerned about my welfare and wanted to help me along the way. Only two persons, however, had such an impact on me that I remember consciously and decidedly committing myself to try to be like them. One is my darling Florence. The other is Monsignor Wilfrid Bray, once

person, we saw the incredible power of peace in the hands of God's own. Force is God's option, not ours.

Your Highness, these are some of the many signs telling us that here the Monarch reigns with his Royal Confidante, Jesus. Because of all the life we see here we know it as the Kingdom of God. Let it be said again, the Monarch who governs in the Kingdom of God makes decisions that breathe life and creativity into the Other. Such a person walks in our dear Lord's footsteps, giving us life to the full.<sup>450</sup>

### **Kingdom of God Summary.**

#### **29.26 The Monarch.**

In the Kingdom of God, the Monarch reigns in the company of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. The Monarch's heart is Their home. Jesus tells us, "If anyone loves me he will keep my word, and my Father will love him, and we shall come to him and make our home with him."<sup>451</sup>

Guided by his Royal Confidante Jesus, the Monarch (using all the treasures Heaven gives him) focuses on the event in question until he sees the Truth. Once discerned, the heavenly response is clear. Since he is Jesus' ambassador in his corner of the realm, he will know how to breathe life and creativity into the Other. Heaven happily shares this power and authority with him. He is very conscientious of his ambassadorial duties and responsibilities. He is conscious this power is one that Jesus shares with him for the glory of His heavenly Father. This being so, the Monarch in the Kingdom of God is very much inclined to be humble and sensitive to the needs of Others.

Yet the Monarch has his sword (his will) at his side at all times. He is ready to strike, with an eternal, "No!" any presence seeking to harm life in the Kingdom of God. All see him as the face of God in the Kingdom.

#### **29.27 The Mind.**

In the Kingdom of God the Mind has great respect for the

In the Kingdom of God, the Mind has no hesitation about consulting with others, and will not let its limitations restrict or jeopardize the dreams and visions of the Monarch.

In the Kingdom of God, the Mind and the Monarch do not argue. They do not contradict each other. They do not criticize, challenge, dispute or embarrass each other.

In the Kingdom of God, the Mind does not try to trick the Monarch, nor does he try to give him wrong information to procrastinate or in any way make life difficult for him. The Mind helps the Monarch to make the dreams and visions of his heavenly Father come true.

### **29.28 The body.**

Having a healthy and fit body is of the utmost importance to the Monarch. Dreams, visions, plans and options mean nothing without a healthy body to transform them into reality. The Heart, the Mind and the Muscle (body) function as a team, serving the Monarch by responding to and complementing the needs of each other.

### **29.29 The Royal flag.**

Like a flag flying proudly over its homeland, Life identifies this place as the Kingdom of God. Jesus tells us, "I have come so that they may have life and have it to the full."<sup>452</sup> Activities in the Kingdom of God are concerned with one thing and one thing only; the health, welfare and happiness of the Other.

### **29.30 The bottom line.**

To live in the Kingdom of God, your entire being, heart, mind and body, must speak words and do things that bring life and creativity to the Other. Listen to the words that come from your mouth (and the mouths of others) and do what has to be done to make the Kingdom of God a reality in your life.

With your will, say, "Yes." to everything that is from God and, "No." to everything that is not. Your vision will improve and you will make better decisions (govern) each and every day. You will become more and more the person that you really are, God's Child in Christ Jesus. Your reign will blossom in Truth and your happiness will be



business,<sup>453</sup> where you will reign in Christ Jesus your King, where you will minister your sacrament of marriage. You will do this by holding on to the Holy Spirit with one hand and your Mother Mary with the other hand– always, in all things.

God bless you.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 30.**

### **The Kingdom of Man.**

#### **30.1 How to Identify It.**

Your Highness, we will now look at a Kingdom whose government is radically different from that of the Kingdom of God, the Kingdom of Man.

[I identify The Kingdom of Man as that area between heaven and hell, where some persons try to live on the edge and at the same time remain “respectable” where their religion is concerned. In fact, these persons have left their heavenly Father's home and are headed for the Kingdom of Satan. Their priorities are theirs and not our King's. “He who is not with me is against me, and he who does not gather with me scatters.” Matthew 12:30]

The person who governs here (now known as the Ruler) was once a Monarch in the Kingdom of God. He allowed his Mind (Logic) to take the throne from his Heart (Love). The Ruler then redirected the treasures of the Kingdom of God from concerns for the Other to concern for his or her Project. The many laws here, reveal this place as the Kingdom of Man. Embracing life as a Ruler in the Kingdom of Man, is the cocoon in which one will eventually metamorphosise and emerge as the Devourer. In the Kingdom of Man, words from the Ruler's mouth paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

#### **30.2 The project is all that matters.**

In the Kingdom of Man, what counts more than anyone or anything, what has more value than anyone or anything, is the Project, the success of the Project, the completion of the Project and the cost of the Project. Everyone and everything are secondary to the Project. Persons are not seen as the apple of God's eye <sup>454</sup> as marvels who have

concern for the health, welfare and happiness of Self. Following are a few examples of what some Rulers have chosen as their Project, things he or she wanted *at any cost*:

[We need good works (projects), but for God's greater glory and the health welfare and happiness of the Other. In the Kingdom of Man, Rulers make Others slaves for their Projects, for their greater glory and at God's expense, for example . . .]

**A mortgage.** The Ruler says, "I don't care what your needs are, the mortgage WILL BE PAID in five years, no matter what!"

**An education.** The Ruler says, "I don't care what he wants, Michael WILL BE A LAWYER."

**"Love."** The Ruler says, "I don't care what you think, THIS MARRIAGE IS GOING TO WORK, and that is the end of that!"

**Summer holidays.** The Ruler says, "THIS WILL BE A PERFECT VACATION, so get with it!"

**Washing the floor and making supper.** A child hurries home with a drawing of his Mom he made at school. His tiny fingers worked very hard, wanting to make her as lovely as he possibly could. His teacher complimented him for doing such beautiful work. He cannot wait to get home and show it to his Mother. Running into the house waving his pride and joy in the air, he shouts, "Mom?"

"Take off your shoes. I washed the floor!" she shouts.

He stops dead in his tracks and returns to the entrance. Carefully laying his treasure on the floor, he takes off his shoes. Later, but with less enthusiasm, he again brings his drawing to his Mom. He wants her to see what he did for her.

"Oh, that's nice," she says, "but Mother's busy making supper. Run along and play."

Puzzled and confused, he leaves. Her concerns for the floor and supper (Projects) are greater than her concern for her son (the Other).

If replies like this happen often enough, he may give up trying to love her or trying to do things for her. Eventually, he may find it is less painful to simply keep out of her way.

**Work.** The Ruler says, “I don't care what you have to do, THOSE REPORTS WILL BE READY ON TIME, no matter what! Got it?”

**Politics.** The Ruler says, “I don't care what has to be done, WE WILL STAY IN POWER, no matter what!”

**Position.** The Ruler says, “I don't care what I have to do, one day I WILL BE A SENIOR PARTNER, no matter what!”

**Ambition.** The Ruler says, “I don't care who gets in the way, I WILL RULE! And that is the end of that. Period”

Some Rulers have small projects. Other Rulers have projects that are more ambitious. Some Rulers pursue one Project after another while other Rulers devote their entire life to a single Project. All Rulers will use anyone, anyway they can, to succeed in their Project. In the Kingdom of Man, words from the Ruler's mouth paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

### **30.4 The conspiracy.**

How did the Monarch (Heart) lose his throne to the Ruler (Head)? How did his obsession with a Project replace love and concern for the health, welfare and happiness of the Other? How did this beautiful person become an instrument for decrees, enforcement and punishment?

Using his manipulative skills, the aspiring Devourer (self-centered conceit), Serpent that he is, gradually and subtly forges a scepter of legal might. Over time, under the guise of friendship, he makes several small, innocent recommendations to the Monarch. These he identifies as, “little ways” to simplify the various processes of government in the Kingdom of God. “This would make life easier for everyone.” he says. “Things would be more clearly defined.” “This will take less time.”

What he was really doing, however, was to replace a life-giving organism the Monarch was administering in his heavenly Father's name, with a sterile legal organization. The consequence of these continued subtle changes was a gradual transfer of power from the Monarch (Love) to the Ruler (law). Concern is shifting from focus on the Other to an obsession with the Project

process. At the appropriate time, the Serpent will make his move.

He (the Ruler) will claim that it is fitting and right that he rules and not the Monarch, since all the legal responsibilities of the Kingdom were on his shoulders. Of course they are. He put them there. To strengthen his argument, he explains that his knowledge of the law is far superior to that of the Monarch. This clearly shows he has the greater skills to govern and not the Monarch. His knowledge of the law is indeed superior to that of the Monarch, since he was the one responsible for its enactment.

No longer having a relationship with Jesus, logic no longer has access to Love, Life or Truth. Everything logic does is now conceived in darkness, is totally subjective and self-serving.

Without the Light of Love, logic has to create its own knowledge and/or use what he has seen or learned from other Rulers. Such information comes in all shapes and sizes, in different contexts, from different situations, from a thousand and one different project experiences. The Ruler now has the formidable task of trying to restructure and reintegrate this data into some kind of order that he can understand. This he will do by logically determining what *he thinks* man's priorities should be and what universal values *he thinks* are important for his purposes. From this warehouse of information, he will draw the data he needs to legislate and to rule. Logic's (the Head's) thoughts, however, are not God's (the Heart's) thoughts. "For my thoughts are not your thoughts, my ways not your ways - it is Yahweh who speaks. Yes, the heavens are as high above earth as my ways are above your ways, my thoughts above your thoughts."<sup>456</sup> In the Kingdom of Man, words from the Ruler's mouth paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

### **30.5 Laws, laws and more laws.**

In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler (who has now replaced the Monarch) speaks only through rules, laws, statutes, prescriptions, policies, regulations, directives, ethics, codes, standards, and so on. These he arbitrarily enacts, proclaims, interprets and applies. The Ruler demands firm compliance, steadfast adherence to systems and so on. His obsession with the project generates a philosophy that promotes regimentation and uniformity stifles life and creativity stunts

done. What happens when such an environment permeates the Kingdom? The growth and creativity of the hearts that dwell there are paralyzed. For some this will be sooner; for others it will be later. The Ruler in the Kingdom of Man has forgotten what Saint Peter tells us, "Never be a dictator over any group that is put in your charge, but be an example that the whole flock can follow."<sup>457</sup>

### **30.6 An example of laws, rules, restrictions.**

Once, I stopped at a certain store to buy a newspaper. While the cashier was counting out my change, I glanced at the merchandise on the shelves behind her. I saw several, large handwritten signs, each blaring a rule for the store's customers.

"We reserve the right to inspect all parcels."

"Absolutely no credit!"

"If paying by cheque, tell cashier before purchase!"

"No cheques taken without proper identification!"

"Senior Citizens must show ID before sale is rung!"

"No returns accepted without the sales slip!"

"No credit or refunds without proof of purchase."

"Shoplifters prosecuted to the fullest extent the law."

"No returns accepted after 3 days!"

### **30.7 Ruler is judge and jury.**

In this Kingdom (although appearances suggest differently), the Ruler is, in effect judge and jury. Monitoring the actions of others, he ensures that all comply with the law as decreed by him. He regards this as his sacred duty, because in so doing he will ensure the success of the Project which he says, "Is for the benefit of all members of the Kingdom." Referring to persons as "members" clearly identifies this voice as that of the Ruler.

Unless there is a limit to his term in office or unless the Ruler leaves, persons who live in this Kingdom have three choices:

1. They leave.
2. They resign themselves to their fate.
3. They spend the rest of their lives in hassles, confrontations and legal battles to overthrow him through some form of insurrection

more subtle than that. He will use pressure of any kind and apply it in any way to use, control or manipulate another person for the sake of his Project. When all else fails, his favorite tactic is to simply forget that the Other exists. The Other is then abandoned and left to survive as best as he or she can. The purpose of the exercise is to teach others what's in store for them should they follow his or her example. In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler makes decisions that paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

### **30.9 Life in the kingdom of man.**

In the Kingdom of Man, in spite of appearances to the contrary, subjects have lost all their basic freedoms: freedom to blossom, freedom to radiate one's own color and perfume, freedom to develop one's own very special talents, freedom to determine one's own priorities, freedom to make one's own choices— their right to surpass themselves and so on.

Matters that we normally take for granted as our birthright, the Ruler now identifies as privileges with limitations. In the Kingdom of Man enjoyment of life is directly related to one's commitment to the Project.

The Ruler distributes goodies and rewards to loyal subjects, not because of their personal achievements, but for their contribution to the Project. This he does with mechanical precision. Those who do not give their all for the Project he forgets. They no longer exist.

Because in this Kingdom the Project is all that matters, life's rhapsodical effervescence is transformed into one long, tiring largo of continued submission. The colors and perfume of one's unique individuality eventually fade into the drab grey and musty staleness of compliance and uniformity. The Ruler has replaced the excitement of spontaneity with the prosthetics of his laws because, “the chances of the Project succeeding are better.” No matter what the disguise, in the Kingdom of Man, regimentation is the order of the day.

In the Kingdom of Man, persons cannot be themselves. They must continually act out their feelings and emotions, pretending to be happy and satisfied, lest the Ruler becomes suspicious of their motives. Because of this all discussions in this Kingdom are such that no

Persons who live in the Kingdom of Man have resigned themselves to their fate. They know they are in a no-win situation. As long as he or she rules, they will only work for the Project. They will only live for the Project. The Project is all they will ever know. The Project will blossom while they as persons will shrivel. They punch in, do their job and punch out. Persons who live in the Kingdom of Man soon become robots. After a time, they no longer have the energy, nor the desire, nor the means to do anything else.

After years of working and living in such a Kingdom, persons retire with nothing to show for their labors except fatigue and old age. They have not blossomed in any way. They have not rejoiced in the years given to them. They have not lived fruitful lives. They have not made nor were they able to make personal contributions to improve the quality of life for others in their community. They have not shared in the joy and happiness of renewing and restoring creation in Christ Jesus. There is only yearning in their hearts, as they contemplate the time left until their departure, that day they will be free of the Ruler and his obsession with his Project.

### **30.10 The weak, the fragile.**

In the Kingdom of Man, there is no room for the weak, for the fragile or for those who need assistance.

In this Kingdom, if you cannot produce the number of units needed, you're on your own, regardless of who is responsible for your condition. The Ruler sees the sick, the very young, the elderly and any other members limited in any way, as embarrassing liabilities and a burden. They take up space and consume resources but do not contribute to the success of the Project.

“Put them away, somewhere.. anywhere.” he says.

Is someone ill? The first question the Ruler asks is, “Who will take his place on the Project?” “Who is on standby?” He has no questions about the state of health of the Other or whether his condition is serious or not or what kind of care he is receiving. In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler has a job to do and he intends to get it done, one way or another— regardless of human cost. His concern is only for the Project. All that matters is the Project. His first concern will always be



words from the Ruler's mouth paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

### **30.12 Numbers in the kingdom of man.**

In this Kingdom, the only numbers that count, are the number of units that show progress on the Project. These he will cite at all appropriate occasions, since they are the yardsticks he uses to measure his glory. Never would this person leave ninety-nine sheep on the hillside and go in search for the one stray.<sup>458</sup> “It just doesn’t make sense.” he says. “The numbers don't add up.”

Our dear Lord would never be his financial advisor, not after seeing how He valued the widow's contribution to the treasury.<sup>459</sup> In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler makes decisions that paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

### **30.13 Creativity in the Kingdom of Man.**

Although there are many hearts (much Love, many dreams and visions) in this Kingdom the ruler's logic prevails. Persons living and working in the Kingdom of Man cannot think differently from the Ruler, they cannot dream differently from the Ruler, they cannot speak differently from the Ruler. There really is no meaningful dialogue. Consultation is not a part of the decision-making process.

If a member of the Kingdom questions, suggests, looks at alternatives or otherwise challenges his Project, he would no longer enjoy the favor of the Ruler. He views such boldness with suspicion and marks the individual as a potential traitor. The Ruler sees such a person as a threat to his authority and to his Project. The Ruler will keep this person at a safe distance, far away from his Project. The Ruler does not even want to see him. Should they continue questioning the Ruler's administration they will suffer the full penalties of the law, his law.

In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler sees creativity by others as a threat to take control over the Project. The Ruler aggressively discourages creativity. “If you're going to be creative,” he says, “don't do it here. I have a Project to complete.”

Because of this, monotony, routine, repetitiveness, boredom and time weigh heavily on all God with all His Life Love Truth

sion. Blinded by his own self-esteem, he is unaware of what everyone else knows, “the head is responsible for where the feet walk.” When something does go wrong, the Ruler makes difficult living and working conditions still more difficult. He makes a mass of rules and regulations more complicated with more rules and more regulations. In the Kingdom of Man, words from the Ruler’s mouth, paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

### **30.15 Storms in the Kingdom of Man.**

In the Kingdom of Man, the sun rarely shines. One storm follows another. Ominous clouds always fill the sky. Lightning and thunder (arguments, anger, discord, attitudes of laissez faire etc.) fill the Kingdom. In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler makes decisions that paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

### **30.16 Forgiving in the Kingdom of Man.**

In the Kingdom of Man, the word forgiveness does not exist, for forgiving is an act of the heart. Our King says, “Forgive your brother from your heart.”<sup>460</sup> Because Logic rules this Kingdom (and not the Heart), it is impossible for the Ruler to forgive. He simply does not know what you're talking about. With the Ruler it's not a question of forgiveness, it's a question of someone breaking the rules and receiving the prescribed punishment. “We have to set an example,” he says. In the Kingdom of Man, words from the Ruler's mouth paralyze life and creativity in the Other.

## **Kingdom of Man, Summary.**

### **30.17 The Monarch.**

In the Kingdom of Man, the Monarch is no longer in control of his will; consequently, he no longer reigns from the throne. Not having any authority or power, he sits to the left of the Ruler. The Ruler allows him to be present, only because his heart has not yet hardened enough to remove him completely. Should the Ruler continue in his ways however, this will eventually happen. Blinded by his own logic and false pride, the Monarch must have his sight restored, otherwise

folded and using your cane, lead your family through this mess of furniture, from one end of the basement to the other. The other members of the family did not wear blindfolds. This exercise was to symbolize how some persons live their lives. Obviously this was going to be a long, complicated, dangerous, discouraging undertaking for everyone. His own family saw his efforts and his approach as dangerous and completely unnecessary. If he didn't wear a blindfold, it would be "a piece of cake." He stubbornly resisted their urging, claiming he had everything under control, thanks to his trusty cane (logic). How ridiculous.

Wearing a blindfold and finding his way using a cane and leading his family behind him, meant it took hours to go from one end of the hall to the other. If he moved too quickly, he increased the risk of danger for himself and the others.

I then asked another family to do the same, except this time the father would use his own eyes (loving concern for the Other) and the lights in the hall (Light of Christ). This father (without the need for a cane/logic) completed the task in mere minutes. He completely circled the obstacles (dangers of this world) with no risk to members of his family, no matter how many persons he had to take with him. Life was not going to be painful, complicated and difficult for him or for them.

~

Yet like the man with the cane, many of us have chosen to take that approach to life. First, we say no to the guiding Light of Jesus. Then, wearing our blindfold (pride), we use our cane (logic) to deal with the strewn furniture (challenges of life). We move slowly, painstakingly, first this way then that way, two steps forward and one step back. Precious years are spent living through one needless disappointment after another, hitting one obstacle after another, suffering heartbreak after heartbreak after heartbreak. Though others do not suffer from their leader's blindness (families, employees, public servants or citizens), he nevertheless forces them to suffer the same consequences. Such persons impose on themselves and on others needless difficulties, complications and dangers, hurting many along the way. This is how the Ruler uses his brain to succeed in the world, to raise his family, to run his organization, to govern his country. What a tragedy!

He will no longer live with his cane (logic). Throwing it away, he will assume his place on the throne and with his heart, in full vision he will govern in Christ Jesus for the greater glory of his heavenly Father.

[If we only knew how blind we are because of the pitch-black darkness of sin in our lives and in this world- we would tremble constantly, not wanting to take one step without the hand of Christ to guide us.]

### **30.19 The Royal Confidante.**

Our dear Lord respects the freedoms and rights of others. With a sorrowful Heart, He will allow the Monarch to reject His Love to embrace his own false pride. The Royal Confidante will not get involved in the affairs of the Kingdom of Man, but He will protect and strengthen His own (Hebrews against Pharaoh). In the end, after logic has exhausted itself (“Herod is now dead...”),<sup>462</sup> which it eventually must do, He will return with a new Monarch and put things in order again.

### **30.20 Logic.**

Cerebral rule has taken over the throne, because the Monarch (from time to time) gave in to false pride. Gradually, under the Tempter's constant interventions, prompts from the heart seem to be more and more nonsensical. (Notice similarities with the first temptation.) Logic was allowed to elbow its way (force) to the decision-making table. The Monarch is not skilled in arguing with logic. It is a foreign language for him since his native tongue is that of Love.

In trying to understand anything, logic is doomed from the very beginning. Logic sees information with its own reason which is necessarily pitch black darkness. Logic does not have the Light of Love. Only Love generates Light with which one can gather knowledge. Only Jesus can generate Light since only Jesus is Love. Jesus says, “The lamp of the body is the eye. It follows that if your eye is sound, your whole body will be filled with light. But if your eye is diseased, your whole body will be all darkness. If then the light inside you is darkness, what darkness that will be.”<sup>463</sup>

**30.23 The bottom line.**

How are you using the gifts given to you by your King? How are you ministering God's Love? What have you done with all the Treasure Heaven has given you? Are you focused on the health, welfare and happiness of Persons or on the construction of your Project(s)?

If you even suspect that you are more concerned about the success of a project, than the happiness, health and welfare of God's children- yourself, your spouse, your children, your brothers and sisters... stop whatever you are doing, return to your King's side, repent and take your rightful place with Him in His Kingdom.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 31.**

### **The Kingdom of Satan.**

#### **31.1 How it can be identified.**

The first thing we notice in this realm is how dark and somber the Kingdom is. In the Kingdom of God, the Monarch died to self to better serve others; but in the Kingdom of Satan, others will die to satisfy the appetites of the Devourer. In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler's concerns were for his Project. In the Kingdom of Satan, these concerns are focused on Self! ME!

In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer is interested in only one person— ME! Satisfying ME! Looking after ME! Pleasing ME! Eventually, the Devourer will consume everyone and everything in his Kingdom. He will do it for his own pleasure and at his convenience. That is why we identify him as the Devourer. Saint Peter tells us, “Be calm but vigilant, because your enemy the devil is prowling round like a lion, looking for someone to devour.”<sup>464</sup> In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer measures his every move against the benefits he will have for him and him alone. The Devourer will severely punish anyone who makes him suffer in any way. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

#### **31.2 Sounds of the suffering.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, there are two dominant sounds: those of the Devourer burping and drooling in self gratification and the despairing cries of those he has trapped. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

#### **31.3 Faces of the dying.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, everyone is there for the pleasure of the Devourer. When they have nothing left that pleases him, they will be left to wither and die. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

ried. On her wedding day, I went by the Church to see how radiant she would be on this very special day in her life.

Waiting outside for her arrival, I saw the groom with his friends, smoking underneath the front steps of the Church. They were laughing together as they talked about what was going to happen that night. My heart broke in two. I wanted to have the wedding stopped, but did not have the courage to do so. How would I explain it? Some time later, after much abuse and the arrival of one child, her parents rescued her.

Too late do the innocent discover, to their horror, that the Devourer is not interested in them as persons. His only interest in them is for the pleasures and services they can give him, in the ways they can be of use to him. As each person realizes that he or she sacrificed the best years of his or her life for the selfish appetites of the Devourer, his or her despair is fathomless. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.5 Freedom.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, freedom of any kind, for anyone, is out of the question. The only freedom slaves in this Kingdom have, is how to best please the Devourer. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.6 The ill, the disabled, the aged.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, persons who are ill, crippled, or otherwise disabled and who cannot serve the Devourer are abandoned. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.7 Submission.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, persons cannot think differently from the Devourer. They cannot dream differently from the Devourer. They cannot speak differently from the Devourer. Everyone is required to live in complete submission to the needs of the Devourer. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

the Other. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.10 Creativity.**

In this Kingdom, creativity exists for the sole purpose of satisfying the taste buds of the Devourer. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.11 Accentuating the negative.**

When things go wrong in this Kingdom (when the Devourer does not have his way), he goes into a blind rage. He severely punishes the wrongdoer for having disturbed his plans and his comfort. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.12 Fragility of the Other.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer will not tolerate subjects who are frail and fragile, unless their frailties and fragilities can add to his pleasures. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.13 Peace.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, there is no Peace. Suffering, crying, anguish, despair and dying are the order of the day, every day. Because of his never-ending preoccupation with personal pleasure and self-gratification, he is unaware of all the tears and sobbing taking place around him. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31.14 The rule of right and wrong.**

In the Kingdom of Man, in this Kingdom the rule of right and wrong is very simple to understand. The Devourer is always right and everyone else is always wrong. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **31 15 Slavery**



die. Friendships die. Understanding and compassion die. Plans die. Growth is stunted. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer destroys life and creativity in the Other.

### **Kingdom of Satan, Summary.**

#### **31.17 The Devourer.**

Man's physical attributes, so lovingly designed to give glory to God through His creation, have now become instruments of terror and war. Their sole purpose is to feed his uncontrolled appetites through the devouring of others. This is a government that is not only out of control but whose values and goals are completely opposite to those of the Kingdom of God. Consequently, the Devourer is constantly in aggressive opposition to Jesus Christ, the Son of God, and everyone and everything associated with Him. Our King is his enemy. As far as the Devourer is concerned, the Spirit is nothing and the flesh is everything, the complete opposite to what Jesus tells us, "It is the spirit that gives life, the flesh has nothing to offer." His kingdom is, in effect, ruled by pride, lust, envy, gluttony, anger, avarice and sloth, the seven deadly sins.

#### **31.18 The Mind.**

Ruthlessly, the Devourer does what he wants, when he wants, to whomever he wants. There is no need to plan anything, other than seeing to his own wants. How this is done does not matter. Once used to help the heart glorify God, his Mind is now a slave to his every appetite. Everything is rush, rush, rush and now, now, now. The great cerebral powers he once had at his service are now confused, incapable, fractured and for all intents and purposes, completely useless. By destroying everyone in his kingdom, the Devourer is, in the process, destroying himself.

#### **31.19 The Monarch.**

The Monarch who once governed in the Kingdom of God allowed himself to be distanced from Jesus (His Royal Confidante) by failing to use his will and by acquiescing to the demands of logic. Then

### **31.20 The Royal Flag.**

In the Kingdom of Satan, death is the flag that identifies the Devourer as the governor. There is no life here. (See Chapter 31.16) Love and forgiveness have long ago died. Dreams have died. Hope has died. Opportunity has died. Mercy has died. Pity has died. Personal relationships have died. Understanding and compassion have died. Friendships have died. Inevitably, everyone (and everything) will die because of the greed and lust of the Devourer. When this happens, the Devourer will perish also, for when there is no one left for him to devour, he too must die.

### **31.21 Sound a little far fetched?**

Here is how, in three seconds flat, I verbally abused and condemned a perfect stranger.

One evening, Florence and I were returning home after enjoying a wonderful Little Theatre presentation. We had a great time together. Suddenly, a small truck sped from a side street into my lane, right in front of me.

“What the hell's the matter with him?” I yelled. “Doesn't he know the law?” I added with a mouth full of venom.

“Maybe there's a reason.” replied Florence in her usual calm voice.

Three blocks down the street we were in front of the General Hospital, and there was the truck– parked at the hospital emergency entrance.

This incident completely shook me up. I had condemned the driver– (Kingdom of Satan). I blamed him for being stupid– (Kingdom of Satan). I showered scorn on him– (Kingdom of Satan). I criticized him for not knowing the law– (Kingdom of Man). My voice was full of anger– (Kingdom of Man and Kingdom of Satan). I jumped on this person's back like a wild animal– (Kingdom of Satan). The worst and the scariest of all is this: the words came out of my mouth without my permission; everything I did to this person was done without my consent. Who was talking for me? Whose voice was this?

“Make a tree sound and its fruit will be sound; make a tree

more violent?

Florence, on the other hand (dearest, gentle Florence), had calmly said: "Maybe there's a reason." (Kingdom of God.) It was clear who was in charge in Her realm. It was clear which heart was reigning in the Kingdom of God and which heart was living in the Kingdom of Man and quickly sliding into the Kingdom of Satan.

A few days later, after recovering from the shock, I started to take stock of what was happening in my life. Was my heart no longer God's home? Was my heart now home to a sort of partnership between Man and Satan, after all these years since my ordination?

Unless we guard the doors (eyes and ears) to the castle (our Heart, where our dear Lord yearns to dwell), our realm (sphere of influence) will be overtaken and be subject to government by the Devourer. Everyone we come into contact with will be hurt. If we do not ask for our King's help to remove the enemy, (who obviously is now in charge), He will do it for us, casting both of us from the Kingdom of God. He must do this since there is no room in His Kingdom (Truth) for any Lie (Satan).

God have mercy on me. Help me to confess and repent for all the terrible things I have done.

### **31.22 The bottom line.**

If this is where you are at, and if you want to return to your Father's home, with repentance and all the strength you can muster, reach out for your King's hand. He is always with you— waiting— He has never abandoned you. God bless you.

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

**Chapter 32.**

**The Three Kingdoms.**

**32.1 An Overview.**

Your Highness, the three Kingdoms and the signs that identify them are:

	<u>Kingdom of God</u>	<u>Kingdom of Man</u>	<u>Kingdom of Satan</u>
Governed by	Love.	Logic.	Self gratification.
Assisted by	Jesus.	Plans. Timetables.	Brute force.
Title	Monarch.	Ruler.	Devourer.
Focuses on	The Other.	The Project.	Self.
Speaks words that	Give Life.	Paralyzes Sterilizes Life.	Destroys Life.
Concerns	Gives to the Other.	Uses the Other.	Takes from the Other.
Knowledge of	Love.	Construction.	War.
Laws for	Life.	Slavery.	Death.
Symbol	Heart.	Head.	Muscle.
Coat of Arms	Heart	Rules	Skull and

me is against me, and he who does not gather with me scatters.”<sup>466</sup>

Our King tells us we have two options where He is concerned, and being neutral is not one of them. He tells us that if we are not with Him we are against Him.<sup>467</sup> Many try to avoid either position, by trying to slide between the cracks, so to speak. They do this by pursuing projects labeled, justified and identified by everything under the sun, except for the greater glory of God. In spite of their efforts to camouflage their goals and pursuits (for the greater good of humanity... making life easier, quicker, better faster etc.), they are simply deceiving themselves by making their journey to hell more adventuresome and exciting.

The kingdom of Man and the Kingdom of Satan have several similarities. Indeed, the former is the entrance to the latter.

-Neither the Ruler nor the Devourer has any interest in what Jesus has to say.

-In either kingdom, the focus from the throne is not on the health, welfare and the happiness of the Other but is directly or indirectly on self, “My Project or ME!”

-In both kingdoms, persons and creation are used to give glory to self and not to the Creator.

-Both the Ruler and the Devourer cause extensive suffering to Others as they relentlessly pursue their respective goals.

-Both Kingdoms are opposites to all values, priorities and everything in the Kingdom of God.

It is only a matter of time before the Kingdom of Man degenerates into the Kingdom of Satan. In exchange for a few years of self-gratification, the Monarch has turned away from the blessing of restoring creation for the greater glory of his heavenly Father and His eternal embrace. He has refused this opportunity to dwell in the House of the Lord forever, preferring his own house to His.

### **32.3 Choices.**

In our heart, God constantly reminds us of the choices we have, “I set before you life or death, blessing or curse. Choose life, then, so that you and your descendants may live, in the love of Yahweh your God, obeying His voice, clinging to him; for in this your life consists, and on this depends your long stay in the land which Yahweh swore to your

your heavenly Father. The angelic host stands ready to help you overcome the powers of darkness.

At times the challenges of Rulers and Devourers will be feeble efforts to test your alertness and strength. At other times, they (Rulers and Devourers) will rage all out war to remove you from your throne and your right to govern over the affairs of your heavenly Father. At times their challenges will appear innocent enough, but in reality will be the thin edge of the wedge, which, if allowed to take hold, may be very difficult to remove.

Everything you need to defend the Kingdom of God and everything you need for your protection and for the protection of your spouse and children is at your disposal. Harness faith and will power to your ministry. Fly your King's pennant. Let His Light guide your path. Let Truth be the spear that conquers enemies of the Kingdom. Celebrate His victories with praise and thanksgiving. During your reign, you and those you touch will be blessed with life in abundance. And when your reign is over your Highness, Jesus will welcome you into His Father's home, to live with Them in joyful delight for ever and ever.

### **32.5 Choice, the Kingdom of Man.**

Your second choice, your Highness, is to devote your entire life to the construction of your project. Remember though, in the end your project with all other man made projects will turn to dust like the pyramids. If you do devote your life to the construction of your project, inevitably, sooner or later, you will awaken to the absurdity of it all. If it is sooner, you will have the opportunity to embrace anew the hearts that you have abandoned and return to again govern in your heavenly Father's name. If it is later, you will have sacrificed your one and only life, to achieve what?<sup>469</sup>

In either case you risk not having a second chance to make it up to yourself, to those who love you and to your heavenly Father, who has placed His trust and confidence in you. Your Highness, you cannot bring a Project into eternity, only your will. The decision to give one's entire life to succeed in constructing one's own project is a very dead end.

Your Highness, we have visited three different kingdoms. By the words, actions and signs of visible persons, persons whose paths will cross with yours every day of your life, we can identify the invisible Monarchs, Rulers and Devourers who reign there. The three Kingdoms have been revealed to you. In the Kingdom of God, the Monarch's words breathe life and creativity in the Other. In the Kingdom of Man, the Ruler's words sterilize and paralyze life and creativity in the Other. In the Kingdom of Satan, the Devourer devours the Other.

### **32.7 The bottom line.**

The choices are clear. Anyone can understand.

"I set before you life or death, blessing or curse. Choose life, then, so that you and your descendants may live, in the love of Yahweh your God, obeying His voice, clinging to him; for in this your life consists, and on this depends your long stay in the land which Yahweh swore to your fathers, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, he would give them."<sup>471</sup>

Dearest child of God, you are not alone.

Your heavenly Father is with you.

Jesus, your God, your King and your Friend is with you.

The Holy Spirit, your Companion and Counselor is with you.

Your spiritual Mother Mary, Queen of Heaven and Earth, is with you.

The angelic host is ready to help you.

The Church with all its treasures is at your disposal, to help you restore creation for the greater glory of your heavenly Father.

I am with you.

God bless you.

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## **Chapter 33.**

### **Jesus, the Lady, and the Pharisees.**

#### **33.1 The way of the Lord.**

Your Highness, you have certainly learned by now not to have anything to do with Rulers and Devourers. By personal choice, they do not participate in restoring creation for the glory of their heavenly Father. They do not value the Other for God's sake. The Kingdom of God has nothing in common with Rulers and Devourers. Rulers and Devourers are enemies of the Kingdom, seeking not only to destroy it, but to destroy it in any way at any cost. When we read John 8:1-11 (the episode of the adulterous woman), we see quite vividly the sinister purposes of Rulers and Devourers, and how far they are prepared to go.

John tells us that at daybreak, "Jesus appeared in the Temple again; and as all the people came to him, he sat down and began to teach them.

The scribes and Pharisees brought a woman along who had been caught committing adultery; and making her stand there in full view of everybody, they said to Jesus, 'Master, this woman was caught in the very act of committing adultery, and Moses has ordered us in the Law to condemn women like this to death by stoning. What have you to say? They asked him this as a test, looking for something to use against him. But Jesus bent down and started writing on the ground with his finger.

As they persisted with their question, he looked up and said, 'If there is one of you who has not sinned, let him be the first to throw a stone at her'. Then he bent down and wrote on the ground again.

When they heard this they went away one by one, beginning with the eldest, until Jesus was left alone with the woman, who remained standing there. He looked up and said, 'Woman, where are they? Has no one condemned you?'

'No one sir' she replied



sons who are simply interested in discussing religious matters with Jesus. Let's look at the text again.

“At daybreak Jesus appeared in the Temple again; and as all the people came to him, he sat down and began to teach them. The scribes and Pharisees brought a woman along who had been caught committing adultery; and making her stand there in full view of everybody, they said to Jesus, 'Master, this woman was caught in the very act of committing adultery, and Moses has ordered us in the Law to condemn woman like this to death by stoning.’”

By addressing Jesus as, “Master,” they attempt to imply a certain propriety by association, thus legitimizing a right to discuss, to talk “together,” to share in matters of common concern. Notice it is the same approach, “Moses has ordered us...” used by the Serpent with Eve; “Did God not say...?”

Listening to the Scribes and Pharisees, one has the feeling that something is wrong here. We feel uneasy. The odor of entrapment is in the air.

“With tongues as sharp as serpents, with vipers’ venom on their lips,”<sup>472</sup> they put forth their legal arguments. They use Moses, the Law, and those present as justification and witnesses for their case—to have this person stoned to death. Jesus, as an authority on the Law, would have to agree with them. Then, everyone would know that *they* were the custodians of the Law, and that even this Jesus must respect their knowledge and application of it.

These signs reveal these scribes and Pharisees for what they really are—murderers. Under the guise of the Law, they are ready to have a person stoned to death for their personal gain (saving face and reputation), and for getting this Jesus off their back. Remember what the focus of the Devourer was in the Kingdom of Satan? Use of Others to satisfy self. As such, they now clearly identify themselves with the Murderer Satan.<sup>473</sup> The Evil One dwells in their hearts.

Having presented Jesus with the facts, they now come to the moment of their sweet delight. It is time for that gentle shove that will end this Jesus, once and for all. The law was stated. The evidence was presented. The accused was found guilty. All that remained was the execution to be confirmed by Jesus

Jesus does not reply. Everyone is shackled in an apocalyptic silence. Time stands still— Heaven and earth watch and wait. Suddenly the delegation engages in an abrupt and hasty consultation. Thinking they now have Jesus in a corner where legally He cannot disagree with them, they have no intention of letting Him off this easy. He must not be allowed to shelter himself in silence. He must bleed His defeat on their legislative cross by vocally agreeing with them. Everyone must hear. Everyone must know that they are right, that they are the legal custodians of the Law, not this Jesus and his teachings. Everyone must now see that He cannot be trusted. St. John tells us they persisted with their question.

They flaunt their case in front of the crowd. Like wild dogs, they attack Jesus barking scripture right and left. Moses' name is thrown about. They shout tradition and the Law, quoting all kinds of legal precedence. At long last they have this Jesus exactly where they want Him. In their hearts, they can taste His blood. After all, doesn't His silence confirm this? In anticipation of the kill, there's a final moment of hysteria. Then... Jesus looks up.

Everyone hushes.

An ominous, prophetic silence corrals their senses. Foreboding fills their hearts.

Looking into the very depths of their souls, Jesus calmly tells them, "If there is one of you who has not sinned, let him be the first to throw a stone at her." Then he bends down and writes on the ground again.

I suspect the only reason Jesus bothered talking with these people at all, was to save the life of this poor woman. Respecting the law, respecting tradition and respecting the church, Jesus looked at them and said, "If there is one of you who has not sinned, let him be the first to throw a stone at her."

In spite of their venomous maliciousness, he succeeds in neutralizing their satanic aspirations without condemnation, without telling them what they were doing was wrong. Indeed, their very own legal arguments will now openly condemn them. They will now personally and publicly confess that not one of them is without sin, in spite of their knowledge their rank their pretenses and their assumed sta-

there. Everyone has left. Jesus and her are alone. Peace and quiet have replaced the clamorous crowd. I can visualize this terrified soul not wanting to leave Jesus with whom she feels so safe and secure. He is powerful. His few simple words, confused, silenced and dispersed her would be murderers. She says nothing against her accusers, nor does she laugh or ridicule them for having been put in their place. One can see her standing in silence, a sort of innocence and simplicity that values truth and honesty. Obviously she is not a threat to anyone. Her passiveness reveals the presence of a simple, trusting heart.

Jesus asks her, "Has no one condemned you?"

"No one, sir," she replies.

"Neither do I condemn you," he says. "Go away, and sin no more."

Our dear Lord does not tell her, what she did was wrong, He simply says, "Go away, and sin no more."

Your Highness, it is not acceptable that persons who live in the Kingdom of God condemn others. Jesus will never condemn us. He tells us, "for every unfounded word men utter they will answer on judgment day, since it is by your words you will be acquitted and by your words condemned."<sup>474</sup> He tells her to sin no more. It's over. It's time to start anew. The future is yours again.

What was the fruit of Jesus' words? Preservation of life, order, justice, peace, calm, respect for God, respect for the Other. Respect for the spirit and the letter of the Law, respect for the Prophets, forgiveness, resurrection and new life. These signs reveal the presence of Love, of God. Jesus' words give life. They resurrect the other. They understand and they forgive. They reveal the presence of the Kingdom of God.

What fruit came forth from the words of the scribes and the Pharisees? Using the weapons of deceit, hypocrisy, entrapment and others, they tried to use the law to crucify Jesus' reputation. They tried to embarrass, mock and ridicule Him, at the expense of the life of another. They did all this for their personal gain. These are the signs that reveal the presence of the Kingdom of Satan.

Your Highness, have nothing to do with Rulers and Devourers. There will be times, however, when you must respond (as in this in-

creativity to Others. The Ruler (Kingdom of Man) is identified by words that use Others for his or her project, sterilizing and paralyzing their life and creativity. The Devourer (Kingdom of Satan) is identified by words that feed on Others for his or her own self-gratification, in effect devouring them.

Your Highness, have nothing to do with Rulers and Devourers. Your blessed heritage is, “to dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of your life, to enjoy the sweetness of Yahweh and to consult with Him in His Temple.”<sup>476</sup>

### **33.2 The bottom line.**

Families today (as always) have to live side by side with abuse of power, hatred, and violence. The question is often asked:

“What can we do to survive?”

“What can we do to protect our children?”

“How can we live our lives as Children of God in this terrible environment?”

“We're outnumbered. It's hopeless.”

Yes, without the Holy Spirit it is hopeless, but, “Whoever remains in me, with me in him, bears fruit aplenty; for cut off from me you can do nothing.”<sup>477</sup>

As Jesus does what He sees His Father do, we too must do what we see our dear Lord do. As the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father and the Son, so must He also proceed from the Son and You, that together you may be One. Otherwise, we and those near and dear to us will be devoured by the evil and hatred that surrounds us— the same evil and the same hatred that surrounded the woman and Jesus in this wonderful episode. Thank God for these revelations.

### **Summary.**

1. In this narrative, a gang of scribes and Pharisees approached Jesus, bringing a woman they wanted to stone to death in accordance with the Law. They taunt the Son of God trying to make Him an accomplice to their little game. This is about as evil, cruel and violent as you can get, and these were persons in power, persons with authority. Yet Jesus is very calm, seemingly oblivious to what is going on. Why shouldn't He be? He is God. Who is going to outsmart God?

accompanied and counseled by the Holy Spirit. Do not even think that the Scribes and Pharisees of our day will be able to trick you anymore than they could Jesus our King. Stay with Jesus. He will never abandon you.

~

2. Jesus does not respond to these attacks from the Darkness. Have nothing to do with evil persons. Because a person's life was in danger, Jesus finally answered calmly and with a few words that completely disarmed them and saved her life. When a similar situation confronts you, take your cue from the Holy Spirit, and let God's words come forth from your mouth and, like your King, disarm those who would cause harm to others. Remember the gift of wisdom you received at baptism? "I myself shall give you an eloquence and a wisdom that none of your opponents will be able to resist or contradict."<sup>478</sup>

~

3. Jesus then spoke to the woman and, again, with words from God's mouth said, "Go away, and sin no more." There was no right and wrong to be preached here. He said, "Go away, and sin no more." In Him, with Him and through Him, with words from God's mouth, we can embrace the intended victim and liberate that person from the chains that bind him or her.

~

4. Where there was hatred, evil and violence, where a life was to be taken, where God was going to be used by others, Jesus restored peace and order. The Kingdom of God became visible to everyone there that day. And so it must also be with you, with your ministry, at home, at work, at play or at Church. Through you in Christ Jesus, the Kingdom of God must be made visible to reveal and dispel the hatred, violence and evil that seek to destroy your spouse, your children, the weak, the innocent, the helpless and the abandoned. There is no other way. "Whoever remains in me, with me in him, bears fruit aplenty; for cut off from me you can do nothing."<sup>479</sup>

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 34.

### The Ministry of Marriage.

#### 34.1 Marriage, first ministry.

There are many ministries in the Kingdom of God, but the very first instituted by God is the ministry of Marriage. "God blessed them saying to them, 'Be fruitful, multiply, fill the earth and conquer it.'"<sup>480</sup>

He blessed our first parents.

He told them to be fruitful,

to multiply,

to fill the earth and

to conquer it.

Our first parents (being His very own children) would, of course, do this in ways they would learn from Him. In marriage, they would learn how to minister from Him to Him.

The blessed mission of the ministry of marriage is to return God's Love to Him, with hearts full of joy, praise and thanksgiving. Thus does God's Love become present and alive in a Divine/Human community. Without the ministry of marriage, there is no sacred community, no Church, no ministering to God. By His authority, married couples minister to God in Christ Jesus, as Kings and Queens in their respective corners of the Kingdom. This they do:

1. Through a loving conjugal communion.
2. Through the transmission of His Life.
3. In making Him known to the new Hearts He places in their charge.
4. In bringing the Love, Light, Life and Truth of Jesus' message to their brothers and sisters.

Hearts called to minister and worship God through the sacrament of Marriage do so in union with the Holy Spirit, who (from the moment of their baptism) gives them everything they need for this ministry. Jesus is the tree, marriage is the blossom— one destined to produce much fruit. The sacrament of Marriage is **the Ministry** on which

**riage.**

Each heart must be a living member of the Body of Christ, fully aware and knowledgeable in the use of his or her baptismal gifts and powers.

Each heart must be spiritually mature, conscious of his or her childlike relationship with his or her heavenly Father, his or her King and his or her Counselor, the Holy Spirit.

Each heart must be aware of his or her mission as Priest, Prophet and King, in restoring creation for God's greater glory in Christ Jesus. They will do this as King and Queen in their realm, nourished, equipped and guided by Christ Himself through His Church, visible sign of His presence with them.

Each heart must be human, sensitive to the divine mandate of caring for the Other, allow and help the Other to grow and blossom to his or her full color, splendor and fragrance.

Each heart must be psychologically mature to the point where he or she can choose to love the Other and be faithful to his or her choice.

Each heart must be sexually mature, to the point where they can love each other for his or her Father's greater glory.

[These hearts must be aware (for their sake and for the sake of the Other), that the Other belongs first to Christ Jesus their Lord and King. Affection for the Other must never be at the expense of the love and affection due to your King. Indeed, the more you love the Other, the greater must be your love for your King who is responsible for bringing the love and beauty of the Other into your life. St. Theresa tells us that it is impossible for one bound by human affection to have intimate union with God.<sup>481</sup> Remember your priorities. (25.5)]

**34.3 When lacking in qualifications.**

Many of us are lacking in these qualifications and, more often than not for reasons that are not of our doing. (?) Hearts who can iden-

a redistribution of its resources for this purpose.

#### **34.4 Marriage models.**

The quest of the lover is to be one with the One loved. It is only when the two become one that love is in full splendor. To see this wonder in marriage more clearly, we will look at seven different marriage models. In each model, a small wine goblet will symbolize the holy state of celibacy. The liquid in the small goblet will symbolize a person living in the holy state of celibacy. A chalice will symbolize the holy state of matrimony, all that two persons can be as one in marriage.

In other words, in marriage, love enables a person to become more than what he or she was as a celibate. In a marriage between two loving hearts, one is more one's complete self than one was as a celibate. Rather than losing an identity, in marriage, one realizes one's total and complete identity.

To do this we must become one with the Other. We leave self to become more than what we were as we become one with the Other. As the years pass, more and more of each person will become one with the Other. Since love for the Other is the reason for doing this, there is no hesitation for placing one's focus and concerns on the Other (Kingdom of God) and not on self (Kingdom of Satan.). This is the power and transforming nature of love.

Married life, however, can also be a time for bitter heartbreaks, many of which needlessly happen, as you have seen from what you have read so far. Many hearts have faced a terrible gauntlet of painful experiences practically from the first day of marriage. We will examine some of these marital situations as well as what you can do about them.

First let's have a quick look at the cover picture, and identify what each item symbolizes.

The gold cross reminds us of our dear Lord's divine love for us, His sufferings and His death. It reminds us that if we are to love a lot, we should expect to suffer a lot— a positive, healing, life-giving suffering that wells from our King's Love.

Each small wine goblet symbolizes the state of celibacy of each person, and the wine in each goblet symbolizes the presence of that



Lord taught us, like our dear Lord did for us. The chalice also tells us that no happiness is possible unless our ministry is one in Christ Jesus. It is here where the ministers in the sacrament of marriage will, with our dear Lord, build His Church. It is here where the Royal Couple will minister to Him, to each Other, to their families and to their brothers and sisters in the community.

In marriage, the two, "Mes" become a new, one, "You."

The blue area symbolizes the Kingdom of God, the darker area, the Kingdom of Man, and the black area the Kingdom of Satan. The gold goblets and gold chalice symbolize our royal stature as God's children. The green page symbolizes our hope in God, His Love and His mercy.

[I invite those responsible to incorporate this symbolic act in the **marriage/Mass** ceremony. Before the marriage ritual begins, the chalice is placed on the corporal on the altar, and a small glass or goblet or cup of mass wine is placed at each front corner of the altar. The celebrant explains the symbolism to the congregation. After the groom says, "I do." he proceeds to the altar and empties his wine glass into the chalice. His empty wine glass is then returned to his corner of the altar, but now the glass is turned upside down. He then returns to his place. The bride does the same after her, "I do." After the marriage is recognized and blessed by the celebrant, the celebrant raises the chalice and says, "Name and Name are no longer two therefore, but one body. So what God has united, man must not divide." (Mat. 19:6) This will be the wine that will be consecrated at Mass, a new "You." created in Christ Jesus.]

Now, let's look at seven marriage models. We will meet:

Mr. and Mrs. Wine.

Mr. Me and Miss Me.

Mr. and Mrs. Grape-juice.

Mr. Wine and Mrs. Water.

Mr. and Mrs. Water.

Mr. Tar and Mrs. Wine.

Mr. and Mrs. Ice-Cube

They did not attain their royal status on their own. This priceless heritage was passed on to them by parents who love and fear God, by a parish community that taught and fed Christian values, by a conscientious school support system and a community that is sensitive to the worth of its members.

Coming together in marriage, their love and their lives will now intermingle into a new rich, full-bodied red wine. Together as God's children, love will be sweet and satisfying, full of color and palatable, for each now lives in reciprocal concern for the health, welfare and happiness of the Other. No matter how stormy it may be outside, it will always be rosy inside. Like the taste of a great new wine, they relish and enjoy the adventure of becoming one with the Other in God's Kingdom. The two previously celibate "Mes." now begin a new life as a one, greater "You." They leave their separateness to live a new life in the Other as One. It is from this new creation, from this new, "You", where marital love, vision and knowledge will be found. It is from this new creation, this new You, where children will be born and raised.

[If either spouse makes any decision as a, "Me" person rather than having decisions made by the "You" person, the wine will slowly sour and lose its flavor. The family unit will disintegrate. Children must never be raised by a, "Me." person; that is not their heritage. A child needs the parental love of a, "You" person to fully blossom with all the perfume and splendor that is rightly his or hers.]

Because their greatest treasure is the Other, these hearts lack and want for nothing else. Happiness for them is not in possession of material goods, but in holding on to their King's hand, together. They are in awe of the beauty and splendor that the Other is. These two hearts will quickly learn how to beat as one.

They have no hesitation or difficulty in giving God praise for His goodness and many benedictions. His presence and His Love are so obvious, they see this in the eyes of the Other. Their vision and strength grow as they nourish themselves with God's Love through the sacraments. This is what enables their love for each other to continu-

in their heavenly Father's home. The Blood of eternal Love and Life flows through their veins. They are great healers for each other and for those around them. Because they are so completely fulfilled, they gravitate naturally to the aid of whoever needs their help.

They have proven their ability to receive and administer God's gifts with thanksgiving and benediction, using them for His greater glory. He will continue to bless them with greater and greater gifts, as they "increase in wisdom, stature and in favour with God and men."<sup>484</sup>

### **34.6 Blessing each other.**

Many couples often bless each other and their children. Is one leaving on a trip? One blesses the other for a safe journey, asking our Mother Mary to watch over him or her. The other blesses the one staying home, asking Mother Mary to have her angels watch over the family. Is one going to the doctor? To the hospital? To minister to another? Whatever the occasion, the other blesses his or her spouse. We ask dearest Mother Mary to help those concerned to do their tasks well, that His children glorify God in all things.

Many sweethearts also bless each other before going to sleep at night. Tracing a cross on the forehead of the other, they say, "(name) by the power of our sacrament of marriage, I bless you in the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit. Amen. Sweet dreams my darling." Their peace and joy will remain secured as long as they continue to live together in their heavenly Father's home. Their security will continue as long as, together, they dwell on His Word, receive His Nourishment through the sacraments and give Him praise, glory and benediction in all things, together.

### **34.7 In death.**

In marriage, when one spouse leaves the other because of death, there is no tear or rupture, because they both die and because they both live. Over the years they have become a one "You."

No longer restrained by physical limitations, the Love and Spirit of the Other dwells in the heart of the survivor more completely than ever before. The survivor also dwells more completely in the spiritual presence of his or her loved One. Remember about one being pres-

In marriage number one, children who are born in this sweet wine of, “You” (and not the sour wines of, “Me” and “Me”) will be the joy and happiness of their parents and of their heavenly Father. Heaven's priceless spiritual heritage will be passed on to them.

[Persons who are virgins when they marry give their newborn a wonderful and unique treasure, the knowledge and certainty that their souls are sheltered in bodies that are wholesome and healthy– a gift of true life from a true love.]

### **34.9 The bottom line.**

Your Highness, in marriage number one we see but a few of the many treasures that make these hearts very rich Monarchs in the Kingdom of God. There are many more. You will have the joy and happiness of discovering these on your own, as you become more familiar with all that your heavenly Father has in store for you.

If marriage number one is your blessed lot in life, you know that you have to protect your kingdom against all enemies. Live in God's Light (Jesus) at all times and Satan's Darkness will never be able to even approach your realm. Darkness cannot displace Light.

“Ask advice of every wise person; never scorn any profitable advice. Bless the Lord God in everything; beg him to guide your ways and bring your paths and purposes to their end. For wisdom is not given to every nation; the Lord himself gives all good things. At his will he lifts up or he casts down to the depths of the dwelling of the dead. So now, my child, remember these precepts and never let them fade from your heart.”<sup>486</sup>



When a couple decides to live together, thinking that they can “try” marriage out before getting married, they tragically deceive themselves.

In such a situation, there is no leaving of self to become one with the other, to become a “You” together– which is THE sign of the presence of Love. Love's total irrevocable gift of self to the Other is simply not present. In this arrangement it is impossible for these Hearts to create a new “You,” because neither heart loves the other to the point of leaving self to live totally and completely for the health, welfare and happiness of the other, for becoming one with the Other. Further, there is no “chalice” to contain the two hearts. They must remain as two and cannot be one. How in the world can one “try being married” when there is no marriage to try. Death to self is indispensable if hearts are to resurrect in a new state– marriage– a new Love called You.

The quest of the lover is to be One with the One loved. It is only when two hearts become One, that love is in full splendor. In Marriage #2, there is no temporal commitment, let alone an eternal commitment. By It's very nature. Love is spiritual for. "God is Love." How

trying to achieve by living together. That very night, she wrote a proposal of marriage in song. At two in the morning, she woke her partner, and with a heart full of Love, sang her proposal to him. In sweet delight they set their marriage date right then and there. They were very happy with this turn of events. Finally they were going to find the peace and security their love for each other was yearning for. Friday evening at the closing of the retreat, they shared this joyful news with the rest of us. Of course, there was a lot of hugging and a few tears as we rejoiced with them. They were married a short time later. “Blessed be Yahweh, the God of Israel, who alone performs these marvels! Blessed forever be his glorious name, may the whole world be filled with his glory!”<sup>487</sup>

#### **34.11 The bottom line.**

If marriage number two is where you are at, there is no way you will know what love is, until the two, “Mes” become a one, “You” in your King’s loving, bountiful Heart.

#### **34.12 Marriage model 3, Mr. and Mrs. Grapejuice.**

In this model grape juice is used instead of wine. This couple has only a superficial awareness of who they are as children of God, and what their heavenly heritage is. They are somewhat conscious of their spiritual roots but can only respond with hollowness to these events and experiences in their lives. The grape juice symbolizes the immaturity of their spirituality and their love.

Because their security is not in their heavenly Father, they will not have Peace. Since peace is the only soil where Love can grow and blossom, this couple will not know the exhilaration of Love.

These persons do not see the need for going all the way with God. They simply do not have the time. The reason they do not have time for God, is because they are too busy searching for happiness. Their energies are divided between what they consider to be the absolute minimum, bare bone essentials where their faith is concerned, and their desire for fun, adventure and happiness. Like a rubber ball, they are always bouncing from one distraction to another, from one possession to another. Once started they are unable to stop. They are never

vision starts and ends– “I see a finger moving” <sup>488</sup>) even their children will be seen as simply another distraction. They are unable to help themselves since they are always looking in the wrong direction.

### **34.13 The bottom line.**

Wake up before it's too late! Eternity will be as precious for you tomorrow as time is for you today. Indeed, time is only eternity's vestibule. Once death opens the door, we have to leave– whether we are properly attired or not.

When God extends His mercies to you (as He is doing now), you would do well to turn from all your distractions and preoccupations, to run and grab hold of your King's hand and never let go of Him again.

Together, embark on the wonderful adventure of finding your spiritual roots. Help each other cultivate them. Water them often with the sacraments. Rejoice as your love will finally have a home worthy of it, Jesus' Heart, your God's Heart, your King's Heart, where it will be nurtured and grow in Him through Him and with Him. Failing this, it will take a crisis to shake you up and bring you back to your senses. When that grace from God is received, for goodness sake, do not respond with curses and blasphemies.

When either event happens, have no hesitation to begin anew together; indeed, rejoice and celebrate God's Love for you. Because of the emptiness you have known, you should now be in a position to really relish Heaven's Presence in your lives. Memories of your earlier years will always strengthen your embraces for your dear Lord, who has made this reconciliation possible.

And, do not worry about not having everything you will need to grow as God's Children.<sup>489</sup> All His treasures will be at your disposal. God bless you.

### **34.14 Marriage model 4, Mr. Water and Mrs. Wine.**

In marriage model number four, one spouse is fully conscious of his or her spiritual identity and lives as a child of God (wine), while the other spouse is not and does not (water). In this situation, there will always be conflict, or, at the very least, uneasy compromises between the spouses where life's priorities and values are concerned

living on different one-way streets, each going in the opposite direction of the Other, each getting further and further away from the Other.

The very least that can be said for this scene is that it's unhealthy. Eventually one of them will have to make a decision, one that is completely in opposition to his or her present position. During this time, there is a danger that One will be a drain on the Other, that One will be a burden on the Other. Eventually, life together will become unbearable for both spouses. What has to happen?

#### **34.15 The bottom line.**

Water must be turned into wine, something our dear Lord does well.<sup>490</sup> For this to take place, the spiritual spouse must persevere and remain faithful to his or her spiritual heritage. The spiritual spouse must be constantly replenished and strengthened with the grace of God to deal with the situation, for his or her values are always threatened with being watered down by the Other. The spiritual spouse must never, never give up one pearl of his or her spiritual and religious inheritance because of the Other.<sup>491</sup> The spiritual spouse must also be patient and accept his or her partner where he or she is at. This may be the very ministry your King is asking of you. If it is, you will receive the grace you need to love and minister properly. Remember the point made on saying “Yes” to the Other, a “Yes” to everything that you see and do not see about the Other?

The patient, understanding, tranquil example of the one (wine), is what will bring about the conversion of the Other (water). There is no force more powerful than that of a living, breathing, shining example. It will be the example of the spiritual spouse as he/she gives witness to the presence and goodness of God's Love that will cause the other to eventually say, “I would like to be like him (or her).” When that happens, there will be great rejoicing, for suddenly, there will be twice the wine, twice the harmony, twice the happiness and twice the joy of being together in their heavenly Father's home.

#### **34.16 Marriage model 5, Mr. and Mrs. Water.**

In marriage model number five, neither spouse is really aware of who they are as children of God. This lack of awareness is symbol-



longer know where to look, what to buy or what to do, to find that elusive happiness they are both looking for. Their spousal relationship becomes a monotonous, tiring ritual. Habit and routine now resemble a bread and water type of existence. Their lives are in a rut.

As their frustrations grow, every setback or unexpected turn of events, no matter how small, becomes a major crisis. One will always blame the other for being the cause of their unhappiness. What's to be done? What happened to their dream of a carefree childlike life? Where are the sunny meadows filled with wild flowers, blue skies, green grass and the delightful sounds of songbirds? Help is needed but it can only come from the outside. When one has lost his or her sense of direction, one MUST get help from the outside.

The sooner they awaken to God's love calling them back to His bosom, the sooner they will feel the juices of real life in their veins again. Their hearts will pump a new life-giving blood, Love. Days will be filled with a new vibrant sense of renewal. Simply holding the other's hand will be an exhilarating experience, for they are now children living in their Father's home. In awe they will watch as their creation disintegrates and their King's creation unfolds just for them.

### **34.17 The bottom line.**

If this is your marital situation, there is a lot of catching up to do. Both of you (or at least one of you) need(s) to be converted. Take our dear Lord up on His invitation. Its time to start knocking on doors... Church doors.

### **34.18 Marriage model 6, Mr. Tar and Mrs. Wine.**

In this marriage, one person, full of the purity and sweetness that identifies him/her as God's Child (wine), has full knowledge of the Kingdom of God and has given him/herself totally to the Other. The other person, with all of the wrong reasons for getting married (tar), sees only, "what can I get for me?" in this relationship. One heart is red; the other is black. In this situation, life will be impossible for both spouses. Each is living in a world whose values are in complete opposition to the other, at war with the other. After the honeymoon, when pretense the novelty and niceties have passed violence will show its

**34.20 Marriage model 7, Mr. and Mrs. Icecube.**

In marriage number seven, we see ice cubes reluctantly falling from each wine goblet. These symbolize two persons who marry for purely selfish reasons. They will remain apart and separate for a long time— until all their selfishness melts and they are converted from water to wine. Their goals are to have together what would be more difficult, expensive and time consuming to have alone. Their home is well furnished and has all the latest gadgets. They give their respective careers their heart and soul and accommodate each other sexually. Life here, is one big happy ride on the merry-go-round. Because of the cold selfishness of their relationship with each other, it will be a long time before they can even think of becoming one in true love in their heavenly Father's home. It will be a long long time before their avaricious and selfish cravings to satisfy self, melt and they are able to be one with God and the Other

### **34.21 The children.**

What effects do you think any of these marriages will have on children who are born in such relationships? What kind of children will Mr. and Mrs. Wine have? What kind of children will Mr. Me and Miss Me have? What kind of children will Mr. and Mrs. Grape-juice have? What kind of children will Mr. Wine and Mrs. Water have? What kind of children will Mr. and Mrs. Water have? What kind of children will Mr. Tar and Mrs. Wine have? What kind of children will Mr. and Mrs. Ice-Cube have?

Review each model again and look at each situation from a child's point of view. What does each child see? How do you expect each child will grow? Although children survive as best they can in the environment they are born into, they will actively search for a healthier climate as soon as they are able to do so; they must if they are to survive.

No matter what your situation, with your King you can easily and joyfully turn things around; provide good soil for your children to grow in, where they can be happy, healthy and strong as God wants all His children to be.

### **34.22 Which marriage model is yours?**

If one (or more) of marriage models two to seven apply to you, together, use everything I have tried to share with you in this book to bring you to model number one. Use your memory and experiences to energize you, and to fuel your appetite to be with your heavenly King as soon as possible.

As spousal love for each other grows anew, SLOWLY re-establish loving relationships with your children. Not before this, since your love for them must well from a love that you share together as God's children. (See Chapter 20.) Heartbreaks in the Family.) Do not forget, their hearts were broken once before. They will want to see if your love for them is truly genuine. If they have left home, do this through letters, special occasion cards, telephone calls, gifts etc. Let every opportunity you have, be one that will reinforce a loving trust between you and them. Do not forget, they once waited for you, now you must wait for them. Ask your dearest Mother Mary to be with you and them. Ask

ish each other with God's words of Life.

Remember that Jesus immunized each of you against the poison of sin. Remember how Jesus suffered for you and that heart next to yours. Remember Jesus rescued each of you personally from eternal death.

Help each other live as the Child of God that each of you are. Help each other discern priorities in the Kingdom of God.

Celebrate each day, for you are a new creation in Christ Jesus. Never forget, you are a prince– a princess– in the Kingdom of God. Rejoice, be comforted and strengthened in the treasures Heaven has given each of you. Together, marvel in the beautiful garden you have been placed in.

Remember that the Lord Jesus is present in the Other. Love, praise and bless your Father who sees to all your needs. Treasure the Holy Spirit as your Companion and Counselor.

Your spiritual Mother Mary is present with you each and every day. Embrace Her and love Her spiritually. Tell Her how much you love Her. Ask Her what any child would ask when one wishes to learn from his or her Mother.

Learn about and meet all your spiritual relatives, Grandfather Joachim and Grandmother Anne; meet your spiritual cousins, the saints, the apostles and your spiritual brothers and sisters. Learn from Kings and Queens, Prophets and Priests who were here before you.

Bless each other at every opportunity. Daily, through the Eucharist, receive the Body and Blood of Christ. Let God embrace you often through the sacrament of reconciliation. Govern using the treasures given to you at your baptism. When illness strikes, receive your Lord's healing Love with joy and praise God.

In blissful surrender, forgive the other always. Never let the rule of right and wrong poison your kingdom. Develop your skills in communications and dialogue. Take the risks required to be present to the Other. Never forget how each of you is so special in God's eyes.

Help each other live in the Kingdom of God, for it is your home. Help each other identify the Kingdom of Man, for it is not your home. Help each other identify the Kingdom of Satan for neither is this terri-

Kingdom of God.

### **34.24 Marriage models 2 to 7, summary.**

Models two to seven are marital situations that will more than likely erupt into bitter heartbreaks and suffering of all kinds. Some will be very serious even fatal. Many lives may be ruined or even destroyed.

If you are in one of these situations, I shared with you how to turn things around, that you and your loved ones can rejoice in having all the blessings Heaven has waiting for you.

If you are not yet married, have a good look at your heart and see who you are. Wine? Water? Tar? Ice? Grape juice?

If you are water or ice or tar or grape juice, don't you think it would be a good idea to ask your King to change you into wine? All the happiness that you want for yourself, your spouse and your children can, by living in the house of the Lord, be realized from the very beginning of your marriage.

And if you are wine, don't you think it would be a good idea to marry wine from the same vineyard and not water or ice or tar or grape juice? A bad choice could bring nothing but heartbreaks into your life and the lives of your children. You do not have the right to move into the life of an Other and fill it with heartbreaks. You do not have the right to fill your children's lives with heartbreaks. An Other does not have the right to come into your life and fill it with heartbreaks. We do not have the right to fill our dear Lord's Heart with heartbreaks. We do not have the right to fill our heavenly Father's "Heart" with heartbreaks. We do not have the right to fill our Lord the Holy Spirit's "Heart" with heartbreaks.

If you are not wine, wouldn't it be better to be changed into sweet wine<sup>492</sup> and blend your heart with another sweet wine? Then with your loved one and your children, live in the house of the Lord all the days of your life— Prince and Princess that you are in your Father's Kingdom.

### **34.25 Separation.**

You have seen how in a valid marriage two persons become

their marriage created. They will always be "one flesh" until "death do us part."

Instead of each continuing the giving of self to the Other, one will now introduce into his or her "You," all kinds of foreign malignant matter that will cause pain to both and to everyone involved. No matter who one spouse is with, the Other will always be there since they are one. When one leaves to love another, or to love one's work, or to love one's recreation, hearts are literally ripped apart. Souls are put through indescribable pain. There is a violent tear separating one flesh into two parts.

The spouse who left the other, can only come back after being thoroughly washed and cleansed by the sacrament of reconciliation, otherwise he or she will contaminate the Other. That person must then discard every foreign matter that became a part of his or her "You" during this whole episode. Then with God's grace and time, their reconciling hearts will heal their wounds and the wounds inflicted on others..

### **34.26 Persons living together but married to an Other.**

Marriage is a ministry given by God to two hearts to:

1. minister to Him through a loving conjugal communion.
2. minister to Him in the transmission of His Life.
3. minister to Him by making Him known to the Hearts He places in their care.
4. minister to Him in bringing the good news of His Son's message to their brothers and sisters in this world, all this, for God's greater glory via the matrimonial nest, the Church they are to build with materials from His Kingdom.

Couples who are living together but married to another cannot build a Church and minister to God. If the first marriage (of either spouse) was valid, it should be obvious that God cannot contradict Himself (and the hearts of so many who are trusting and dependent on Him) by discarding His first blessing and replacing it with a new one in its stead. Who, in all sincerity and goodwill, expects God to contradict Himself when He has said, "... what God has united, man must not divide" <sup>493</sup> *God is Truth and Truth does not change*

is God. You are not alone, and God has not abandoned you. “Does a woman forget her baby at the breast, or fail to cherish the son of her womb? Yet even if these forget, I will never forget you.”<sup>494</sup>

Having read this book, you will surely now realize how fragile we all are, and that no one “naturally” wants to harm another. Blame, finger pointing and retribution are completely out of the question. This is not a time for lawyers, it’s a time for angels.

Use the power of your sacrament of Marriage (that God Himself blessed) to evangelize your situation and return order in the Kingdom of God. Use the power of your sacrament of Marriage to evangelize the healing and reunion of separated hearts, to evangelize the rebuilding of the Church God has asked you to build for His greater glory.

God is God and there is nothing that He cannot do. The chaos, destruction, disorder and changes that took place because of a marriage breakup, can all be restored– the marriage can be rebuilt– each of you can have new life and a new audacity as you forge ahead, if you use the power of your sacrament of Marriage to evangelize the situation. “God is God, not of the dead but of the living.”<sup>495</sup>

The task may seem unthinkable, and understandably so; however, with a spark of goodwill, and a desire to minister to your King once again, your goal is within reach. As you leave the Darkness and approach the Light, as you leave the Noise and approach the Quiet, as you leave turmoil and anxiety and approach the God of Peace, as you leave confusion and chaos and approach His healing and resurrecting counsels, you will soon see that everything is possible, for with our God, “... nothing shall be impossible.”<sup>496</sup>

You are not a nobody. You are a Prince or a Princess in the Kingdom of God. God has placed all of Heaven's love, mercy and power at your disposal. He has told you that “nothing shall be impossible for you.”<sup>497</sup>

Reconcile yourself with your heavenly Father through the sacrament of reconciliation.

Contact your parish priest, God's ambassador in your kingdom. In fraternal love, with God's minister in your midst, together, partners, children, separated spouses pray and discern, discuss and help each other. Every diocese has a “Marriage Office” where persons in difficulty

(with a heart full of joy and benediction) from singing His praises, and telling of His wondrous works forever and ever. Amen.

**34.27 The bottom line.**

When is a marriage successful? When it slips and trips and falls, 7,776 times and rises 7,777 times. Each growing pain, each resurrection is a learning experience— a new growth that nourishes, strengthens and beautifies the marriage bloom, a sign of God's presence in your marriage ministry.

When is a marriage a failure? When it trips, falls and lies there, to slowly shrivel and eventually die.

†



This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 35.

### A Loving Supplication.

#### 35.1 Our dear Lord's appeal.

Once when preparing for a retreat, I felt prompted to write this appeal from our dear Lord to those couples I would be meeting that week. The lights were dimmed. Sweethearts sat together hand in hand— and in quiet listened. Listen...

“My dearest children, ah how I have suffered because of my love for you and for this heart that I have placed next to yours. How terrible a price I paid to redeem you, my treasures. How far I went to bring your beautiful souls back to my Father's home. What abuse, insults and shame I endured to vanquish the powers of darkness, to redeem your freedom.

Dearest treasures of my sacred Heart, the sufferings, pain, anguish and terror of the effects of sin that were yours, I took unto myself. In my holy and sacred love for you, I willingly and freely subjected myself to all the horrors of separation from my loving Father. In the intense terror of those last days, every sorrow and every pain of every exiled heart was mine. This is why I came.

Oh what a price I paid to redeem each of you, to free you from the bondage of sin. I suffered a most bitter loneliness, an agonizing anxiety, a fearful dread and the humiliation of submission to sinful man.

Dearest treasures of my sacred Heart, look into each others eyes and see the soul for whom I willingly suffered such terrible beatings, for whom I endured the cruel whipping of madmen as they lacerated my back, my sides and my arms, all for your precious hearts.

Dearest treasures of my heavenly Father's love, it was for each of you that I suffered the excruciating pain of thorns that penetrated into my brow, my temple and even into one of my eyes. I cringed in humiliation at being submitted to men drunk with madness and in Satan's grin so that each of you can be freed from the powers of evil

the weight of sin, into the dirt of mankind. Dearest son of Adam and dearest daughter of Eve, as I endured the abuses of a crazed population, I bore the shame and heartbreak that would have been yours in facing your heavenly Father. Men spat on my holy countenance. They threw stones at my sacred body. Their dogs snapped at my heels. My pain and terror became a simple parade for the jeering crowds.

Dearest son of Adam, dearest daughter of Eve, look at this heart placed next to yours, this treasure of my love. This soul is so precious that I would willingly endure everything anew for her salvation and happiness. To liberate you from the consequences of sin, I refused no pain. I suffered all these terrible things for your safe return home.

My dearest children, I gave my life for your salvation. Let neither of you hinder nor obstruct my love for the other. My children, love each other as I love you. Let neither of you appear before me as the persecutor of the one I love so much. My Love for my Father and for you, paid all your debts. Let neither of you have me bleed and cry in pain needlessly.

I have gone ahead to prepare a place for you. I have gone ahead that you may not be alone when you return to your Father's home. Let neither of you cause the other to die along the way. By loving and forgiving each other as I love and have long ago forgiven you, you will find my arms open to receive you and to hold you always.

Dearest treasurers of my sacred heart, do not hurt each other. Respect what is God's. Do not shame me or the person I have suffered so much for. Do not persecute the heart I have made whole. I died for each of you.

Dearest son of Adam and dearest daughter of Eve, live in wonder and in awe of each other. With gentleness, patience, understanding and caresses, help each other. Hide yourselves in my sacred Heart. Protect each other from the Evil One who seeks only to deceive and destroy you.

Dearest children of the most holy Trinity, my heavenly Father has entrusted this heart to you. Love, cherish and protect it. Let not His trust and confidence contribute to your damnation. Become One with me.

Remember my precious ones, the price I have paid for this soul

complete. Come with me little ones, to the home your heavenly Father has prepared for you from the beginning.

Have no fear my precious ones, I will be with you always.”

†

This is the day the Lord has made, let us rejoice and be glad. Psalm 118:24.

## Chapter 36.

### Your Highness, Your Throne Awaits You.

#### 36.1 Dearest Friend,

This part of our journey has come to an end. I shared with you some of my experiences in the Kingdom, as many as I could within the limitations of one book.

As you read, there are many miracles that take place every day in the Kingdom of God, for such is the nature of it. One you should never overlook is this: no matter how many times we fall, we have His Life in us to rise again, and again and again, as often as is necessary. This is proof of our presence in the resurrected body of Christ, proof of the presence of the Holy Spirit in us.

Our reign as Monarch, as Princes and Princesses in the Kingdom of God begins with the most powerful of all words in the Kingdom, "Yes."

"Yes," to loving Jesus our King, with all our heart, with all our soul, all our mind and all our strength.

"Yes," to His Light, to His Way, to His Life and to bringing His Love to each and every person He died for.

"Yes," to your loving Father, to His Love for you, to His continual presence as He provides for all your needs and comfort.

"Yes," to the Holy Spirit, Lord God of Love, Life, Prayer and Ministry, It is He who enables you to minister in, with and through Christ for our Father's greater glory.

"Yes," to dearest Mother Mary, your Spiritual Mother and your Queen. "Yes." to her loving counsels that you may be the worthy Prince or Princess that is your heritage as Gods' child.

Your Highness, it is time for your "Yes!" to the loving hearts God has placed next to yours, your darling spouse and His blessed children. Be Christ's Light in their lives. Clothe them with the royal robes of baptism. Nourish them with God's Word. Strengthen them with the sacred sacraments. Walk with them on this pilgrimage to

with the saints in the Kingdom of God, for “the grace of the Lord Jesus is with you.”<sup>499</sup>

Blessed Friend, you are a Prince, you are a Princess in His Kingdom. As God's son, as His daughter, it is incumbent upon you to carry out your royal duties accordingly. God has placed His Love, His trust and His confidence in you. As you read, He gives you everything you need. His eternal love and sweet embrace will be your blessed joy. His Presence with you in this life is confirmation of this. This is not a dream that is too good to be true. Now is the time to govern and to be about your Father's affairs as Jesus teaches us.

Your Highness, no King or Queen has ever had or ever will have what awaits you, as Monarch in this wonderful Kingdom. Think very carefully about everything the Holy Spirit is sharing with you, for our dear Lord tells us most clearly, “He who is not with me is against me, and he who does not gather with me scatters. And so I tell you, every one of men's sins and blasphemies will be forgiven, but blasphemies against the Spirit will not be forgiven. And anyone who says a word against the Son of Man will be forgiven; but let anyone speak against the Holy Spirit and he will not be forgiven either in this world or in the next.”<sup>500</sup>

Your Highness, I thank the Most Blessed Trinity with all my heart for the grace of sharing these moments in the Kingdom with you, and for the opportunity of bringing you this feast of loaves and fish for your hungry soul, from my little basket in the Kingdom of God.

Thank you, dearest Mother Mary, for your counsels– for your prayers and for your help, enabling me to reach out to your children, my brothers and sisters.

Thank you Philip my guardian angel, and thank you dear saints, you who prayed and watched over me during this work.

Thank you, dearest Florence, you who saw to my needs these last five years. While I wrote and wrote and wrote, you cooked– and washed– and sewed– and held my hand– and inspired me.

Thank you, dear reader, dearest brother and dearest sister in the Lord. Thank you for taking this journey. Thank you, for allowing me to share God's Love with you. May you be a great Monarch in your corner of His Kingdom one that will make your heavenly Father proud

we call him?”<sup>501</sup>

Your Highness, if you have any questions on how to begin your reign, or how to continue with it, visit your parish priest, minister or religious leader. If you do not have a parish priest, minister or a person you can confide in, I would be pleased to hear from you and help where I can. Should you wish to share some of your experiences with me, I would read your letters with interest, perhaps even include them in a second book.

The last word? From first Word; Jesus tells us, “If any man is thirsty, let him come to me! Let the man come and drink who believes in me.”<sup>502</sup> (for) “The time has come” he said ‘and the kingdom of God is close at hand. Repent, and believe the Good News.”<sup>503</sup>

Your Highness, may the Peace of God fill your heart, and, may almighty God bless you, † in the name of our Father whose children we are blessed to be, and His Beloved Son Jesus our King, whose ministers we are blessed to be, and the Lord Holy Spirit, our faithful Counselor and Teacher.

Go in peace, to love one another and minister to the Lord through your blessed sacrament of marriage. God has given you everything. What a great and wonderful journey lies ahead for you.

Your brother in Christ,

Raymond



**Closing Prayer.**

† In the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.  
Amen.

Blessed is thy Holy Name Jesus my King, for all you have done for me, it will surely take an eternity to love you in return.

Most loving Father, blessed is thy Holy Name for loving us so, for blessing us with the gift of being your children, for the gift of being with you, of knowing you, of loving you, of living our lives hand in hand with you in Jesus our Lord and our King, with the Holy Spirit, Mother Mary, our spouses, our children and our friends.

May the government you have entrusted to us Father, always make you proud of what we have learned from your Son and our Lord.

Father, I love You.

Glory be to the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, as it was in the beginning, is now, and ever shall be, world without end. Amen.

Dearest Mother Mary, thank you for all your love for me. Help me to know, love and serve your Son Jesus, my Lord and my God.

† In the name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.  
Amen.

†



*Marriage in the Kingdom.*

*The Beginning.*

*A men!*



**Analytical Index.**  
**(C. = Chapter)**

Abba! 12.1  
Adam, father 5.1  
anxiety, 25.19  
appeal, the 35.1  
banquet, the royal C. 15  
banquets royal, corn husks a fatted calf C. 16  
baptism, your a holy Thursday just for you C. 10  
baptism, yours is your first resurrection 10.4  
body, your 10.17  
breeze, an experience with a 25.4  
communication is through our senses 2.14  
comportment, your 19.3  
conflict, how to prevent 21.11  
corpse, hugging a 21.9  
counsel, the jewel of 17.4  
creation, in charge of God's creation 11.1  
creation, man's 8.2  
creation, visible sign of our invisible God 30 C. 4.  
creation, you are a new 10.8  
crowd, two's a crowd, three's company 21.12  
crown, your new 10.9  
darkness our, a light comes into C. 9  
death, in the blueberry patch 21.1  
deception, the voice of 5.6  
dialogue, between sweethearts 3.2  
dialogue, is to love, what blood is to life C. 3  
discerning, example of community speaking 27.2  
discerning, at 110 kilometers an hour 26.2  
discerning, community approval C. 27  
discerning, importance for discerning 27.1  
discernment, C. 25  
do, what to 1.2  
doctor is healed 7 23

flesh and blood, window to the invisible other 2.1  
 forgive, power to forgive C. 21  
 forgiveness, example of 21.4  
 forgiving is everything 21.2  
 forgiving with royal generosity 21.3  
 fortitude, example of the gift of 17.6  
 fortitude, the jewel of 17.5  
 freedom, loss of 25.2  
 Friend, my dearest 36.1  
 generous, we must be as generous as He is 12.4  
 gifts, our Father's countless gifts 12.3  
 God's goodness in creative action, 20.5  
 God, how do we hide from 7.6  
 God, how much closer to you can God get 4.3  
 God, you are not 6.7  
 grace, as a condition for discernment C. 24.  
 head, (logic) in battle with the heart (love) 6.1  
 heart, your 10.15  
 heartbreak, cutting h. off at the pass 21.7  
 heartbreaks in the family C. 20  
 heartbreaks! heartbreaks! heartbreaks! C. 1  
 heartbreaks, why are there so many 2.1  
 hearts broken, a field strewn with 1.1  
 heritage, your royal heritage C. 19  
 Holy Spirit, 13.9  
 Holy Spirit, bringing sheep back to the flock 13.1  
 Holy Spirit, faithful friend & companion C. 13  
 Holy Spirit, helping at work 13.7  
 Holy Spirit, melting a heart 13.11  
 Holy Spirit, ministering on the road 13.13  
 Holy Spirit, needing our help 13.8  
 Holy Spirit, our teacher 13.1  
 Holy Spirit, presence in ministry 13.6  
 Holy Spirit, presence in teaching 13.5  
 Holy Spirit, prompts from the 13.4  
 Holy Spirit voice of 25.3

Jesus, seeing presence in others C. 23  
 Jesus, the lady, and the pharisees C. 33  
 Jesus, what has Jesus done for you? 11.4  
 Jesus, you and creation 4.2  
 Jesus, your king, your royal confidante C. 11  
 jewels, the crown jewels C. 17  
 Kingdom of God, peace and not by force 29.24  
 Kingdom of God, accentuating the positive 29.14  
 Kingdom of God, being oneself 29.9  
 Kingdom of God, blame 29.19  
 Kingdom of God, C. 29.  
 Kingdom of God, condemnations 29.2  
 Kingdom of God, creativity is the word 29.11  
 Kingdom of God, learning opportunities 29.1  
 Kingdom of God, focus is for the other 29.2  
 Kingdom of God, force is God's option 29.21  
 Kingdom of God, fragility of the other 29.15  
 Kingdom of God, freedom 29.8  
 Kingdom of God, full potential 29.7  
 Kingdom of God, happy faces 29.5  
 Kingdom of God, how to identify it 29.1  
 Kingdom of God, lies 29.17  
 Kingdom of God, life anything but dull 13.14  
 Kingdom of God, love is stronger than force 29.22  
 Kingdom of God, most powerful force 29.25  
 Kingdom of God, no waste 29.13  
 Kingdom of God, order in the kingdom 29.12  
 Kingdom of God, peace 29.16  
 Kingdom of God, quiet and noise 29.23  
 Kingdom of God, rule of thumb 21.5  
 Kingdom of God, sounds are sounds of life 29.3  
 Kingdom of God, speed 29.18  
 Kingdom of God, the body 29.28  
 Kingdom of God, the mind 29.27  
 Kingdom of God, the monarch 29.26  
 Kingdom of God, the royal flag 29.20

Kingdom of man, numbers in the 30.12  
 Kingdom of man, project is all that matters 30.2  
 Kingdom of man, ruler is judge and jury 30.7  
 Kingdom of man, sounds in the 30.11  
 Kingdom of man, storms in the 30.15  
 Kingdom of man, the C. 30  
 Kingdom of man, the conspiracy 30.4  
 Kingdom of man, the enforcer 30.21  
 Kingdom of man, the monarch 30.17  
 Kingdom of man, the project defined 30.3  
 Kingdom of man, the royal confidante 30.19  
 Kingdom of man, the royal flag 30.22  
 Kingdom of man, the weak, the fragile 30.1  
 Kingdom of man, use of force 30.8  
 Kingdom of Satan, accentuating the negative 31.11  
 Kingdom of Satan, C. 31.  
 Kingdom of Satan, condemnations 31.9  
 Kingdom of Satan, creativity 31.1  
 Kingdom of Satan, environment 31.16  
 Kingdom of Satan, faces of the dying 31.3  
 Kingdom of Satan, fragility of the other 31.12  
 Kingdom of Satan, freedom 31.5  
 Kingdom of Satan, how it can be identified 31.1  
 Kingdom of Satan, ill, the disabled, the aged 31.6  
 Kingdom of Satan, learning experiences 31.8  
 Kingdom of Satan, no escape 31.4  
 Kingdom of Satan, peace 31.13  
 Kingdom of Satan, rule of right and wrong 31.14  
 Kingdom of Satan, slavery 31.15  
 Kingdom of Satan, sound a little far fetched 31.21  
 Kingdom of Satan, sounds of the suffering 31.2  
 Kingdom of Satan, submission 31.7  
 Kingdom of Satan, the devourer 31.17  
 Kingdom of Satan, the mind 31.18  
 Kingdom of Satan, the monarch 31.19  
 Kingdom of Satan, the royal flag 31.2

language, religious 6.3  
 language, romantic 6.2  
 liturgy, of the hours, the 19.2  
 Lord, fear of the, the jewel of 17.9  
 Lord, the way of the 33.1  
 love and responsibility C. 28.  
 love, is all that counts 21.8  
 love, is more important than health 23.5  
 love, must love 23.4  
 love, where love is, God is 23.1  
 making things happen 1.5  
 marriage model 1, Mr. and Mrs. wine 34.5  
 marriage model 1, summary 34.23  
 marriage model 2, Mr. me and Miss me 34.1  
 marriage model 3, Mr. and Mrs. Grapejuice 34.12  
 marriage model 4, Mr. water and Mrs. wine 34.14  
 marriage model 5, Mr. and Mrs. water 34.16  
 marriage model 6, Mr. tar and Mrs. wine 34.18  
 marriage model 7, Mr. Mrs. Icecube 34.2  
 marriage models 2 to 7, summary 34.24  
 marriage models 34.4  
 marriage qualifications, when lacking in 34.3  
 marriage, 7 models C. 34  
 marriage, and children 34.21  
 marriage, and children 34.8  
 marriage, and death 34.7  
 marriage, and separation 34.25  
 marriage, blessing each other in 34.6  
 marriage, first ministry 34.1  
 marriage, qualifications of spouses 34.2  
 marriage, which model is yours? 34.22  
 Mary, assistance, examples of 14.5  
 Mary, books about 14.1  
 Mary, counsels received in prayer 14.4  
 Mary, heartbreaks, our Mother's 14.2  
 Mary Her anniversary gift 14.7

miracle, part two, with Jesus, do it 1.4  
 money. loving money more than loving our heavenly Father 12.2  
 moral autonomy, is not ours 5.5  
 name, your name says it all 11.2  
 no, saying, 16.1  
 no, when to say 25.1  
 Other, meeting the other means taking risks 2.15  
 parents, first God placed a limit on our 5.4  
 parents, our first and what they did C. 5.  
 peace, without peace we have nothing 25.2  
 perfectionist, the 20.3  
 person, good the 20.4  
 personality, and character influence 20.7  
 persons, living together married to another 34.26  
 persons, living with others, dying with things C. 2  
 persons, not present to self 2.3  
 persons, only persons can love 2.8  
 persons, the ideal reply 2.2  
 persons, did not acknowledge my presence 2.4  
 persons, who live with things 2.7  
 persons, who saw neither self nor me 2.5  
 persons, who saw only a thing 2.6  
 Physician, your royal 120 C. 18  
 piety, the jewel of 17.8  
 plea, your spouse's 8.4  
 pray, where do we pray 19.5  
 prayer 19.4  
 prayer closing page 283  
 prayer opening page 1  
 prayer time is learning time 19.13  
 prayer, a time to ask questions 19.8  
 prayer, ask your mother Mary 19.1  
 prayer, community 19.21  
 prayer, how long before I can pray? 19.15  
 prayer, how often should we pray? 19.16  
 prayer, how your questions are answered 19.9



priority number one, the Lord 25.6  
 priority number six, your extended family 25.11  
 priority number three, your spouse 25.8  
 priority number two, your health 25.7  
 priority, conflict between children/spouse 25.15  
 priority, ministry or community service in conflict with priorities 25.13  
 priority, when family/service in conflict 25.14  
 priority, when priorities seem to collide 25.16  
 priority, work in conflict with priorities 25.12  
 psalms, the 19.19  
 reconciliation, 21.1  
 redemptive act, a comparison of the 10.3  
 repent, and live 18.1  
 responsibilities, your royal 12.6  
 resurrection, saint John and living our first 10.7  
 resurrection, saint Paul and living our first 10.6  
 resurrections, St. Augustine and the two 10.5  
 right and wrong, the enemy of goodness 20.6  
 right and wrong. 20.2  
 rosary, the 19.18  
 Satan's approach 6.1  
 Satan's garden of eden 8.1  
 serpents, did they really talk? 6.4  
 sin, eighteenth visible sign, walking dead 7.21  
 sin, eleventh visible sign, speed 7.14  
 sin, enslaves 6.13  
 sin, fifteenth visible sign, spirit condemns 7.18  
 sin, fifth visible sign, time and eternity alone 7.8  
 sin, first visible sign of sin, nakedness 7.2  
 sin, fourteenth visible sign, new gods 7.17  
 sin, fourth visible sign of sin, blame 7.7  
 sin, fruit of is death 5.7  
 sin, how Jesus immunized us from the poison of sin 10.2  
 sin, immunized against the poison of sin 10.1  
 sin, kills 5.8  
 sin mv first 7 3

sin, twelfth visible sign of, avarice 7.15  
 sin, visible sign of sin, rage 7.11  
 sin, visible signs of sin's poison C. 7  
 sin, why compared to a fruit 6.11  
 sin, thirteenth visible sign of, heart hardens 7.16  
 speed, is an obstacle to meeting the other. 2.13  
 spirit, or serpent C. 26.  
 status, your royal status 19.1  
 stones, seven precious 17.1  
 supplication, a loving C. 35  
 temptation can mesmerize, poison and kill C. 6  
 Tempter's presence, first sign of the 6.5  
 Tempter's response 6.9  
 Tempter, importance of not responding to the 6.6  
 throne, awaits you C. 36  
 Thursday Holy, holy 15.1  
 time, people need time sometime 21.13  
 title, your new 10.9  
 tomatoes, jealous of the 2.16  
 tree, the one tree you must not eat from 5.3  
 trees, what "eat of all the trees in the garden" means 5.2  
 understanding, the jewel of 17.3  
 universe just for you 4.1  
 vine, a branch on the vine again 24.2  
 vine, how i was nursed back onto the vine 24.3  
 vine, we must be part of the 24.1  
 visible signs, life line for survival 2.17  
 visible, seeing as a sign of the invisible 2.9  
 visible, sign of the invisible 2.11  
 will, your 10.14  
 wisdom, the jewel of 17.2  
 world, where Jesus of Nazareth was born into 8.3  
 world, you were born into C. 8  
 yes, when to say 25.1  
 you, God looks at you in wonder and in awe 10.1  
 you how special are you 28 1

Your life, your career or your marriage can take one of three paths. You will either live in a Kingdom where concern for your welfare and happiness is paramount, or you will live in a Kingdom where persons will use you for the sake of their personal project, thus paralyzing and sterilizing your life and creativity, or you will live in a Kingdom where persons will use you to satisfy their own personal pleasures. One Kingdom offers security, peace and happiness, the other two Kingdoms, terrible, cutting heartbreaks.



With God's help, this book will take you on a journey that you may know who gives life, who paralyzes and sterilizes life, and who destroys life. Informed, you can then make decisions enabling you to reign as God's Son or Daughter in your Father's Kingdom, loving and caring for Others. The journey is in three parts: Part one, "Meet the Real You," part two, "Heartbreaks and Forgiveness" and part three, "When to say 'Yes' and when to say 'No!'"

Florence and Raymond were married in June 1957. They are blessed with; three beautiful daughters and three handsome sons. Raymond (a retired consultant in municipal administration) was ordained permanent deacon in 1975 (Ottawa, Ontario Canada), and served at St. Gabriel's parish in Gloucester Ontario. Later he was a resource person for the diocese of Sault-Ste-Marie in the ministry of baptism. Florence and Raymond also helped out in pastoral care at the Sudbury General Hospital of the Immaculate Heart of Mary and the Laurentian Hospital. Later, he gave a number of retreats on marriage and now this book. Florence -dearest Florence is the Heart through which God's Love made all these wonderful things happen.

288

+

